OF Ghoſtes and Spirites, Walking by Night,

And of ſtraunge Noyſes, Crackes, and ſundrie forewarnings, which commonly happen before the death of men: Great ſlaughters, and alterations of Kingdomes.

One Booke,

Written by *Lewes Lauaterus* of *Tigurine*.

And tranſlated into Engliſh by *R. H.*



Imprinted at London by Thomas Creede.
1596.

To the Reader.

BEing desirous (gentle Reader) to exercise my selfe with some translation, at vacant times, and seeing, that since the Gospell hath beene preached, this one question, touching the appearing of spirits and soules departed, hath not bin much handled amongst vs, and therfore many, otherwise well affected in religion vtterly ignorant heerein, I thought it not amisse to take in hand some good and learned Treatise concerning this matter. Wherein as many haue both learnedly, painfully, and religiously trauelled: so amongst others, none in my iudgement hath more handsomly & eloquẽtly, with more iudgment & better method discoursed the same, thẽ *Lewes Lauaterus*, Minister of Tigurine. Others haue hãdled it indeed wel, but yet *Nihil ad nostrũ hunc*, being either too short, or too long, or too

darke, or too doubtful, or otherwise so cõfused, that they leaue the Reader more in suspence in the end, then they found him in the beginning. As for Maister *Lauaterus* his discretion heerein, I will no otherwise commend it, then to desire the Reader to view, and iudge himself. For thus much at the first sight he shall see: A cleare methode, with a familiar and easie stile, the matter throughly handled *Pro* and *Con*, on both sides, so that nothing seemeth to be wanting, nor any thing redounding. And if it be true that Horace saith, *Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit vtile dulci*, that is, He winneth the prize, that ioyneth pleasure with profit: I thinke this Authour may also in this respect be pronounced *Victor*, and adiudged to the best game. For he so intreateth this serious and terrible matter of Spirits, that he now and thẽ inserting some strange story of Monks, Priestes, Friers, and such like counterfeits, doth both very liuely display their falshood, and also not a litle recreate his Reader: and yet in the end he so aptly concludeth to the purpose, that his histories seeme not idle tales, or impertinent vagaries, but very truthes, naturally falling vnder the compasse of this matter. And how profitable

table this his woorke is, thoſe may beſt iudge, which are moſt ignorant in this queſtion, ſome thinking euery ſmall motion & noyſe to be Spirites, and ſome ſo fondly perſwaded that there are no Spirits, who being better enformed herein by this Authour, I ſuppoſe will confeſſe his work to haue done them ſome profit: if knowledge be profitable, and ignorance diſcommodious. And againe, thaſe which being hitherto borne in hande thot mens ſoules returne againe on earth, crauing helpe of the liuing, and haue ſpent much of their ſubſtaunce on idle Monkes and Friers, to relieue them, will confeſſe the like. For when they ſhall ſee they haue bene falſely taught, and that they were not the ſoules of men which appeared, but either falſhood of Monks, or illuſions of diuels, franticke imaginations, or ſome other friuolous & vaine perſwaſions, they will thinke it profitable to haue knowne the truth, as well to auoid error hereafter, as to ſaue their mony from ſuch greedy caterpillers. Some alſo which be otherwiſe well trained vp in Religion, and yet not knowing what to thinke of theſe matters, will not iudge their labour euill imployed, nor the worke vnprofitable, wherby

they may be brought out of doubt, and know certainly what to beleeue. There be many also euen now a dayes, which are hanted & troubled with spirites, and know not howe to vse themselues, who when they shall learne how a Christian man ought to gouern himselfe, being vexed with euil spirits, wil think it a very profitable point of doctrine, that shal teach them to direct themselues. Profitable therefore it is, and shalbe, no doubt, vnto many, and disprofitable vnto none, except perchance vnto popish Monks and Priests, who are like hereby to lose a great part of their gaines, which sometimes they gathered togither in great abundaunce, by their deceitfull doctrine of the appearing of dead mens soules. But this their wicked and diuellish doctrine, togither with all the patches and appendices therto belonging, he so notably teareth and cutteth in peeces, that I am well assured they shal neuer be able to cobble and clout them vp again. And this doth he with such a moderation of breuitie and tediousnesse, that I may rightly say: He hath said well, and not too much, and written truly, and not too litle.

Now as touching my translation, although I haue

To the Reader.

haue not made him ſpeake with like grace in Engliſh, as hee dooth in Latine: yet haue I not chaunged his meaning, nor altered his matter, endeuouring my ſelfe rather to make thee vnderſtand what thou readeſt, then to ſmoothe and polliſh it with fine & picked words, which I graunt others might haue done more exquiſitely, and perchaunce I my ſelfe alſo ſomewhat better, if I would haue made thereof a ſtudy and labour, and not a recreation and exerciſe. But howſoeuer I haue done herein, verily good reader, I truſt thou wilt take in good part, which is all that I eſteeme: if any man ſhall miſlike thereof, let him amend it. I truſt it be ſufficient to teſtifie my good will to do thee good, and to let thee vnderſtand the Authours meaning.

Farewell.

To the right excellent and

moſt wiſe and vertuous Lord *Iohn Steigerus* Conſull *of the noble Common wealth of* Berna, *his good Lord and Patrone*, Lewes Lauaterus *of* Tigurine, *wisheth health.*

MAny and diuers things are reaſoned vpon, both of the learned and vnlearned, as wel of other matter,, as alſo of Spirites, which are ſeene and heard, and make men afraid in the night ſeaſon, and in the day time, by ſea and by lande, in the fields, woods, and houſes: And likewiſe concerning ſuch ſtraunge things which for the moſt part happen before the death of certain men, eſpecially great Princes, and before notable innouations of Kingdomes and Empires. Many which neuer ſawe or heard any of theſe things, ſuppoſe all that is reported of them, to be meere trifles and old wiues tales: for ſo much as ſimple men, and ſuch as are fearefull and ſuperſtitious, perſwade themſelues they haue ſeen this or that, when indeed the matter is farre otherwiſe. Againe, there are ſome, which aſſoone as they heare of any thing, eſpecially if it happen in the night, they by and by thinke ſome ſpirite dooth walke, and are maruellouſly troubled in minde, be-

cause they cannot discerne naturall things from spirites. And some (chiefly those whiche hunt after gaines, by the soules of dead men) affirme that the most part of such things which are heard or seene, are the soules of dead men, which craue helpe of them that are liuing, to be deliuered out of the torments of most cruell paine in Purgatorie. Many not only of the common sort, but also men of excellent knowledge, do maruell whether there be any spirits or no, and what maner of things they are. Yea and some of my familiar friends haue many times requested me, to shew them my opinion concerning these matters. Wherfore me seemeth it shall be worth my laboure, if I declare briefly and plainly out of the word of God, what we ought to iudge concerning these things. For the Ministers of Gods Church can take nothing more profitable in hande, than to instruct the people of God purely and plainly, in such necessary matters as come in question out of the word of God, which is a lanterne (as the Psalmist saith) vnto our feete, and a light vnto our pathes: and to deliuer them from all errour and superstition, and bring them out of all wauering and doubt. And verily their studie & diligence is to be highly commended, who for these fewe yeares ago, haue set forth certaine bookes drawne out of the scriptures, written in the Germaine tongue against sundrie errours: and theirs likewise who in these our dayes by writing of bookes do teache, instruct, and confirme the rude and vnlearned people. For amongst many other excellent benefits, which God our heauenly Father hath bestowed vppon mankinde, this

also

also is a great and most liberall gift, that in this latter, and as it were old age of the world, he hath brought to light by the Art of Imprinting, aswel many other good Authours, as also the holie scriptures of the old and new Testament, written in diuers languages: whereby he doth not onlie teach vs amply and fully what to beleeue, and what to doo, but also mightily subuerteth and quite ouerthroweth diuers and sundrie errours, which by little and little haue crept into the Church. Truly all such are verie vngrateful towards God, which do not willingly acknowledge this so notable a benefit.

As touching this my treatise concerning Spirits, and straunge wonders, I haue deuided it into three partes for the more cleare vnderstanding therof. In the first parte I shewe, that there are visions and spirits, and that they appeare vnto men sometimes, and that many & maruellous things happen besides the ordinarie course of nature. In the second I discusse what maner of things they are, that, is not the soules of dead men, as some men haue thought, but either good or euill angels, or else some secret and hid operations of God. In the third I declare why God doth somtime suffer Spirits to appear, and diuers forewarnings to happen: and also how mẽ ought to behaue themselues when they happen to meete with such things. In these points or partes, the chiefest thing wheron men vse to reason touching this matter, are conteined. Now I meane to handle this matter, being very obscure and intricate, with many questions, (I trust) so plainly, & clerely out of the holy scriptures, whereon we may surely stay our selues, out of the

The diuision or partes of this booke.

anciēt fathers, allowed historiographers, and other good writers, that those which are studious and louers of Gods truth, may well vnderstand what may be denied & thought of those apparitions, & other straunge & maruellous matters. And I also trust that euen our aduersaries also, (in case they will lay their affections aside, but a litle while) wil say that I haue truly alleaged all their argūments, and confuted thē without any railing or bitternesse. For my purposed ende is according to the doctrine of Saint *Paule*, to edifie and not to destroy.

As touching diuinations, blessings, iuglings, coniurings, and diuers kinds of sorcerie, and generally of all other diuelish practises, certaine learned men of our time haue written bookes, as *Gasper Pencerus*, *Ioannes Viera*, *Ludouicus Mellichius*, and perchaunce some others also, whose worke I haue not yet seene. It is not long ago since *Ioannes Riuius* a man learned and eloquent, published a booke in the latin toong, entreating of spirites and superstition. In the which booke albeit very briefly, yet doth hee as he is wont in all things, very finely & eloquently intreat of this matter, and of other foolishe superstions. And albeit that I do write more largely of this, yet was it not my minde to gather togither al those thinges which I could haue spoken and alleaged touching the same matter: but only such as seeme the chiefest and most especiall points, partly because I would not be tedious to the reader, & partly also least my books should grow vnto an ouer great quantity. I haue great hope that *Ioachimus Camerarius*, that excellent man, who readeth the auncient writers both greeks and latins, with

with exquisite iudgemēt, and hath great experience in all things, will shortly write learnedly & at large of this matter, and also of others like vnto it. For so muche hee seemeth tō promise in his preface to *Plutarches* Booke, *De defectu oraculorum, & figura, & consecrata Delphis* (wherin he handleth the nature and operatiōs of diuels) and also in other of his writings. I for my parte had once written this my treatise in the vulger tong, and now bicause I trust it shal be also profitable to other men, I haue translated it into latin, adding certaine things thereto.

This my booke which I haue with great labour and study gathered out of other mēs writings I present & offer vnto you (most noble consul) according to the ancient fashion & custome: not for that I suppose you haue any neede of my teaching, touching these things which are herein hādled. (For I am not ignoraunt, vnder what teachers you haue atteined vnto true learning, and how you haue and do continually read ouer sundry good authors with perfect knowledge in many tongues.) But partly that I might purchase credit and authoritie vnto this my booke with those men, vnto whome your goodnes, godlinesse and constancie (which you haue alwaies hitherto euermore shewed, and yet do shewe, in setting forth true religiō, & mainteining good lawes) is throughly knowne: and partly that I might shew my selfe in some respecte thankfull vnto you. For your honour hath bestowed many benefits on me, whom you onlie knowe by sight, and vppon other Ministers of the Church, wherby ye haue so bound me vnto you, that I shall neuer be able to make any recompence. Wherfore

The dedication.

Wherefore I most earnestly beseech you, not to refuse this signe and token of my good wil, be it neuer so simple: but rather to vouchsafe, whē ye haue leisure from the laboure and toile of the common wealth, to reade ouer this my booke: for I haue good hope it will not seeme vnpleasaunt vnto you & others in the reading, as wel for the plaine order I vse therin, as also for the sundrie and manifold histories in it recited.

Almightie God, who hath so blessed you with his heauenly gifts, that for them, (albeit very yong) you haue aspired vnto the highest degree in your noble citie and dominiō of *Berna*, vouchsafe to preserue you in health, and increase and multiply his good gifts in you. My Lords & brethren the ministers of *Tigurin*, and also your old companion master *George Grebelius*, that excellent man in lerning, vertu, and nobilitie, hartily salute your Lordship. From *Tigurin* in the month of Ianuary, the year of Christs Natiuitie. 1570.

The

A Table of the Chapters of the three principall parts, touchings Spirits walking by Night.

Of the first part.

CONcerning certaine words which are often vſed in this Treatiſe of Spirites, and diuers other diuinations of things to come. Chapter. 1. Folio. 1.

Melancholike perſons and madde men, imagining things which in very deed are not. Chaper. 2. Fol. 9.

Fearefull men, imagine that they ſee and heare ſtraunge things. Chap. 3. Fol. 14.

Men which are dull of ſeeing and hearing, imagine many things which in very deed are not ſo. Chap. 4. Fol. 16.

Many are ſo feared by other men, that they ſuppoſe they haue heard or ſeene ſpirits. Chap. 5. Fol. 21.

Prieſts and Monkes fained themſelues to be ſpirits: alſo how *Mundus* vnder this colour defiled *Paulina*, and *Tyrannus* abuſed many noble and honeſt matrons. Cha. 6. Fol. 23.

Timotheus Aelurus, counterfeiting himſelfe to be an Angell, obteined a Biſhoppricke: foure Monkes of the order of Preachers, made many vaine apparitions at *Berna*. Chapter. 7. Fol. 28.

Of a counterfaite and deceiuing ſpirite at *Orleaunce* in *France*. Chap. 8. Fol. 37.

Of a certaine pariſh prieſt at *Clauenna*, which fained himſelfe to be our Lady, and of an other that counterfeited himſelfe to be a Soule, as alſo of a certaine diſguiſed Ieſuit Frier. Chapter. 9. Fol. 41.

That it is no maruell if vaine ſightes haue bene in olde time,

time, neither yet that it is to be maruelled at, if there be any at this day. Chap. 10. Fol. 45.

That many naturall things are taken to be ghostes. Chapter. 11. Fol. 49.

A proofe out of the Gentiles histories, that ghostes do oftentimes appeare. Chap. 12. Fol. 53.

A proofe out of the histories of the auncient Church, and of the writings of holy Fathers, that there are walking spirits. Chap. 13. Fol. 62.

That in the bookes, set foorth by Monkes, are many ridiculous and vaine apparitions. Chap. 14. Fol. 65.

A proofe by other sufficient writers, that spirits do sometime appeare. Chap. 15. Fol. 68.

Daily experience teacheth vs, that spirites do appeare to men. Chap. 16. Fol. 71.

That there happen straunge wonders and prognosticatiõns, and that sodain noyses and cracks and such like, are heard before the death of men, before battail, and before some notable alterations and chaunges Chap. 17. Fol. 77.

It is proued by testimonies of holy scripture, that spirites are sometime seen and heard, and that other strange matters do often chaunce. Chap. 18. Fol. 85.

To whom, when, where, and after what sort, spirits do appeare, and what they do worke. Chap. 19. Fol. 88.

The Chapters of the second part.

The opinion or beleef of the Gentils, Iewes, and Turks, concerning the estate of soules seperated from their bodies. Chapter. 1. Fol. 92.

The Papists doctrine touching the soules of dead men, and the appearing of them. chap. 2. Fol. 102.

What hath followed this doctrine of the Papists, concerning

ning the appearing of mens ſoules. Chap. 3. Fol. 110.

Teſtimonies out of the word of God, that neither the ſoules of the faithful, nor of infidels, do walke vpon the earth after they are once parted from their bodies. Chapter. 4. Fol. 114.

Teſtimonies of the auncient Fathers, that deade mens ſoules parted from their bodies, doo not wander here vppon earth. Chap. 5. Fol. 116.

A confutation of thoſe mens arguments or reaſons, which affirme, that dead mens ſoules do appeare. And firſt, that is anſwered which certaine do alleage, to wit, that God is omnipotent, and therefore that hee can worke contrary to the ordinary courſe of nature. Chap. 6. Fol. 123.

That the true Samuel did not appeare to the Witch in Endor. Chap. 7. Fol. 127.

A confutation of their arguments, which woulde haue Samuell himſelfe to appeare. Chap. 8. Fol. 133.

Whether the Diuell haue power to appeare vnder the ſhape of a faithfull man? Chap. 9. Fol. 140.

Moſes and *Elias* appeared in the Mount vnto Chriſt our Lorde: many haue beene raiſed from the dead both in bodie and ſoule, and therefore ſoules after they are departed, may returne on earth againe. Chap. 10. Fol. 145.

Whether the holy Apoſtles thought they ſawe a mans ſoule, when Chriſt ſodeinly appeared vnto them after his Reſurrection. Chap. 11. Fol. 148.

Concerning the holy Fathers, Councels, Biſhoppes, and common people, which ſay that ſoules doo viſibly appeare. Chap. 12. Fol. 151.

Whether ſoules doo returne againe out of Purgatorie, and the place which they call *Limbus puerorum*. Chapter. 13. Fol. 155.

What thoſe things are which men ſee and heare: and firſt that good Angels do ſometimes appeare. Chap. 14. Fol. 159.

That ſometimes, yea and for the moſt part, euill angels doo

doo appeare. Chap. 15. Fol. 163.

Of wondrous monsters, and such like. Chap. 16. Fol. 164.

That it is no hard thing for the diuell to appeare in diuers shapes, and to bring to passe straunge things. Chap. 17. Fol. 167.

Diuels do sometimes bid men do those things which are good, and auoyde things that are euill: sometimes they tell truth, and for what cause. Chap. 18. Fol. 171.

The Chapters of the third part.

God by the appearing of Spirits doth exercise the faithfull, and punish the vnbeleeuers. Chap. 1. Fol. 175.

What the cause is that in these our dayes, so fewe spirites are seene or heard. Chap 2. Fol. 183.

Why God doth suffer straunge noyses, or extraordinary rumblings to be heard before some notable alterations, or otherwise. Chap. 3. Fol. 186.

After what sort they should behaue themselues, which see good or euill spirits, or meete with other strannge aduentures: and first how both Iewes and Gentiles behaued themselues in the like cases. Chap. 4. Fol. 187.

How Christian men ought to behaue themselues when they see spirits, and first, that they ought to haue a good courage, and to be stedfast in faith. Chap. 5. Fol. 190.

It behoueth them which are vexed with spirites to pray especially, and to giue themselues to fasting, sobrietie, watching, and vpright and godly liuing. Chap. 6. Fol. 193.

That spirits which vse to appeare, ought to be iustly suspected: and that we may not talke with them, nor enquire any thing of them. Chap. 7. Fol. 199.

Testimonies out of the holy Scripture, and one example whereby it is prooued, that such kinde of apparitions are not

to

to be credited, and that we ought to be verie circumſpect in them. Chap. 8. fol. 201.

After what ſort the faithfull in the primatiue church, vſed themſelues, when they met with ſpirits. chap. 9. fol. 204.

That ſundry kindes of ſuperſtition haue crept in, wherby men haue attempted to driue away ſpirits. chap. 10. fol. 206.

That ſpirites are not to bee driuen away by curſing and banning. chap. 11. fol. 214.

After what ſort we ought to behaue our ſelues, when we heare ſtraunge cracks, or when other forewarnings happen. Chapter. 12. fol. 216.

FINIS.

The first parte of this Booke, concerning Spirits walking by night. Wherin is declared, that Spirits and sights *do appeare, and that sundry strange and monstrous things doo happen.*

CHAP. I.

Concerning certaine wordes whiche are often vsed in this Treatise of Spirits, and diuers other diuinations of things to come.

TO the intent, that those men which occupie themselues in reading of this my Booke, and especially in perusing of other auncient writers, may the better vnderstand euery thing, I will at the first enterraunce briefly expounde those things which shall seeme to concern the proprietie of words and termes vsed in this my Treatise of Spirits.

Spectrum, amongst the Latines doth signifie a shape or forme of some thing presenting it selfe vnto our sight. Spectrum.

Scaliger affirmeth, that *Spectrum* is a thing which offereth it selfe to be seene, either truly, or by vaine imagination. The Diuines take it to be a substance without a bodie, which being heard or seene, maketh men afraide.

Visum, signifieth an imagination or a certaine shewe, V. sum.

which men being in slæpe, yea and waking also, séeme in their iudgement to behold: as we read of Brutus, who saw his owne angell. Cicero in his first booke Acadæm. quest. writeth, that *Visum*, amongst the Grecians is called φαντασία, a fantasie, or vaine imagination.

Visio. Also the Latines call those things *Visiones*, which the Grecians name φαντασίας.

Terriculamenta. *Terriculamenta*, are vain visions or sights, which make men afraide. The Latines also call it *Terriculum*, because it breedeth feare.

Phantasma. *Mat.* 24. *Marke* 6. That which S. Matth. 24. and Marke 6. call φαντασμα, Erasmus doth translate it *Spectrum*: but the old interpreter useth the Greeke word.

φασμα in like manner doth signifie an elfe, a sighte or vaine apparition. Suidas maketh a difference betweene *Phantasma* and *Phantasia*, saying, that *Phantasma* is an imagination, an appearance or sight of a thing which is not, as are those sightes which men in their slæpe do thinke they sée: but that *Phantasia*, is the séeing of that onely which is in very déede.

Pneuma. *Luk.* 24. πνεύμα is taken in Luke 24. chapter, for a spirite or vaine imagination. Howbeit most commonly some other word is ioyned vnto it, if it bee put for an euill spirite: as πνεύματα πλάνα, πονηρα. The Gentiles (as S. Augustine and other Fathers do testifie) supposed that the soules of men became *Dæmones*, that is, good or euil angels: which if they had done well, then were they called *Lares*, that is priuate gods: but if they haue done euill, then were they named *Lemures*, or *Larue*, bugs and Elues. But if it were doubted whether they had liued well or ill, then were they called *Manes*. Apuleius and other old writers affirme, that *Genij* and *Lares* were all one.

Larés. It was supposed (as Festus witnesseth) that *Lares*, were the soules of men, or else infernall gods. *Lares* were called

Præstites. *Præstites*, because they made all things safe with their cies:

that

that is, they saued and preserued all things.

And Authors affirme, they were called *Hostily*, for that they were supposed to driue away enemies. Neither were they thought to beare rule only in priuate houses, & in crosse méeting waies, but also to defend Cities. They were likewise worshipped priuately in houses, and openly in the high wayes. As touching those that were called *Lares*, you may read more in Anthonius Constantius, of Fauentia his Commentaries, and in Ouid. lib. 5. Fastorum. Hostily.

Genius (say the Grammarians) is the naturall god of euery place, of euery thing, or of euery man when we are borne, as it is written, we haue two *Genij*, whereof the one encourageth vs to do well, the other to do euill. *Genius* (saith Censorinus) is a god in whose gouernance euery man doth liue, so soone as he is borne: either because he taketh care for our begetting, or that he is engendred with vs, or else that he taketh charge and defence of vs when we are begotten. Sure it is, he is called *Genius*, *à gignendo*, that is, of begetting. Genius.

Penates likewise are domesticall gods. Macrobius affirmeth, that they are gods by whom we onely breathe, by whom we enioy this body, and by whom we possesse the reason of our mindes. Nonius saith, *Lemures* are spirites walking by night, and terrors rising of pictures of mē & beasts. Other say, that *Lemures* are euil and hurtfull shapes which appeare in the night, yea and that they be the soules of those that make men black and blew, called after that name. Penates.

Some men call the ghosts of all dead things by ỹ name of *Lemures*. Thus saith Apuleius, Of those *Lemures*, he that hath care of his posteritie, and inhabiteth the house with a peaceable and quiet kinde of rule, was called *Lar familiaris*, god of the house. And because among the people of olde time, as they counted *Lares* good, so they supposed *Lemures* to be naught, therefore to driue them away, they did sacrifice vnto them. Vmbræ.

Lemures. Some other affirme, that *Lemures* are soules which tarry about the bodies. Porphyrius calleth them the wandring soules of men departed before their time, as it were *Remures*, taking their name of Remus, whose soule followed his brother Romulus: who to the intent he might pacifie them, instituted feastes called *Lemuria*.

Laruæ. Seruius writeth, that *Vmbræ* were called *Laruæ*: and they called dead mens soules by the name of *Vmbræ*. Of *Laruæ* men are called *Laruati*, that is to say, frantike men, and such as are vexed with spirits. Who also as (Nonius

Ceriti. witnesseth) are called *Ceriti*.

Manes. Seruius saith, that mennes soules are called *Manes*, at suche time as departing from their bodies, they are not yet passed into other bodies. And he iudgeth that they are so called by the figure ἀντίφρασις, (whiche is when one speaketh by contraries) of the olde adiectiue *Manus*, that is good, because they were nothing lesse than good. For the auncient people supposed, that *Manes* were infernall gods, and therefore did they number them amongst their euil gods, and pacified them with sacrifice, least they should hurt them. Some affirme that *Manes* are indeed infernall gods, but yet good: whereof commeth *Mane*, which signifieth good, and *Dii Manes*, as if you would say, good and prosperous gods, and therof also is said *Immanes*, for, not good.

Some other suppose, that soules separated from the bodies, were called after this name: Wherby we see the auncient monuments of tumbes haue bene dedicated to *Diis Manibus*, to the infernall gods: In the which opinion Apuleius was, as we said a little before.

There are some that iudge *Manes*, to be the very same, that the old people called *Genii*, and that there were two of these *Manes* assigned vnto mens bodies, euen immediately after their begetting, which forsake them not whē they are dead, but continue in the graues after the bodies are consumed. For the which cause, those men who defaced Monu-

ments,

ments, were thought to doe wrong vnto the gods called *Manes*. The sothsayers called as well the celestiall as the infernall gods by the name of *Manes*, and that because they beleeued (as Festus doth write) that all things did *manare*, that is, were deriued from them. Other thinke they were so called *à manando*, of flowing, because the places betweene the circle of the Moone and the earth, from whence they come, are full of soules.

Maniæ are deformed creatures, as Festus saith: and also vgly shapes, wherwith nurses make children afraid. Maniæ.

μορμω is a woman with a face almost of a monstrous fashion: herof it is taken for a hag: as also μορμολύκειον doth signifie a terrible sight, a spirit, or an elfe. Nicephorus saith in his Ecclesiasticall history, that a woman vsing to walke by night, is called by the name of Gilo. Mormo.

Lamiæ were supposed of the auncient people to be women hauing eies to put out or in at their pleasure, or rather certaine shapes of diuels, which taking on them the shewe of beautifull women, deuoured children and yong men, allured vnto them with sweete inticements. Lamiæ.

Philostratus in his booke Appollonio, writeth a maruellous history or fable of one Menippus, beloued of an hegge. The same authour writeth, that *Lamiæ* are called of some men *Laruæ*, spirits walking by night: and *Lemurei*, night spirits of horrible shapes: and of many *Empusa*, ghoasts of variable fashion: and that nurses so named them to make their children afraide.

Chrysostomus Dion writeth, that in the inmost part of *Affrike* are certain wild beasts, hauing the countenance of a woman, which in like manner are called *Lamiæ*: and he saith that they haue their paps and al the rest of their breast so faire as any Painters wit can deuise, which being discouered, they deceitfully allure men vnto them, and when they haue taken them, doe forthwith deuoure them.

In the fourth chapter of the Lamentations of Hieremie, Lament. of Hier. chap. 4.

it is saide: *Lamiæ nudauerunt mammas suas, &c.* Apuleius writeth, that *Lamiæ* are things that make Children afraide.

Striges. *Lamiæ* are also called *Striges*. *Striges* (as they say) are vnluckie birdes, which sucke out the blood of infantes lying in their cradles. And hereof some men will haue Witches take their name, who also are called *Volaticæ*, as Festus writeth.

Gorgones. The name of *Gorgon*, was inuented to make children afraid: for they say these *Gorgons* are rauening spirites, such as men faine *Lamiæ* to be.

Incubi. Succubi. *Ephialtæ*, and *Hyphialtæ*, that is, *Incubi & Succubi*, (which we call Maares) are night spirits or rathers Diuels, which leape vpon men in their slæpe. The Phisitians do affirme, that these are nothing else but a disease.

Empusa. *Empusa*, is an apparition of the Diuel, or a spirit which sheweth it selfe vnto such as are in misery, chaunging his shape into diuers formes, and for the most part appeareth at none time. Read more hereof in Suidas.

Dicelon. *Dicelon*, is so called, because it is sent to make men afraid: those kinds of terrors the Grecians call *Hecatæa*, as

Hecatæa. Apollonius writeth, because Hecate or Proserpina is the cause of them, who therefore is called βεμιὰ ἀπὸ τῦ βεμᾶν, that is of terrifying, and that by reason that terrours by night were thought to be stirred vp by her.

Acco. Alphito. Plutarchus writeth, that *Acco* and *Alphito*, were monstrous women, by naming of whome, mothers kept their children in awe, and made them feare to do euil.

Cardanus calleth these Diuels which kæpe vnder the earth, and many times kill men as they are vndermining,

Telchinnes. by the name of *Telchinnes*. Men vsing witchcraft, and such as are possessed with a Spirit, and out of their wits, are called amongst the Grecians, πλῆκτες.

Pan. Faunus. Of these sort are these monsters, halfe like men, and halfe like beastes, whiche men say are founde in woods,

and

and oftentimes haue appeared vnto men. It is saide, that *Panes* and *Fauni*, are all one, hauing their nether parts like vnto Goates feete.

And menne saye, that *Satyri*, are almost lyke vnto men: And those whiche are of full age are called *Sileni*. Satyri. Sileni.

Onocentaurus, is a beast of a straunge fashion, which is reported to be like a man in the vpper part, and downward like an asse. Onocentaurus.

Onosceli, as it is written in Plutarche, are Diuels, hauing legges like vnto asses. Onosceli.

The olde people imagined, that *Hippocentauri*, were creatures, who before were like to men, but the hinder parts had the similitude of horses. Hyppocentaurus.

And they do faine, that *Sphinx* is *Animal* ἀνθρωπομορφον, a beast of the similitude of a man. Sphinx.

Scilla, and *Harpyæ*, are rauening Diuels, with faces like vnto maydens. Scilla. Harpyæ.

As touching men liuing in the Sea, as *Tritones*, *Nereides* and *Syrenes*, who as the auncient people affirmed, had faces like vnto men. Reade Gesnerus in *Historia Aquatilium*, where he intreateth of them. For he prooueth out of many Authors, that there are founde Monsters in the Sea, hauing shapes and countenaunces somewhat like vnto men. Triton. Nereides. Syrenes.

Some of these Monsters which are indéede, bee of the kinde of Apes, and some are onely fabulous, or false: yet notwithstanding, it may be, that the Diuell doth deceiue men vnder the formes of them.

Thus much concerning tearmes, which we must vse in this our Treatise of Spirits or Visions.

Hereunto haue I adioyned straunge happes, and foretokens, which for the most part chaunce before great matters. And therefore I knit them vnto these, becauls they haue great resemblance vnto them.

For

For vaine imaginations also appeare vnto our sights: armed men as it were are seene on earth, or in the aire: and other such like shapes, voyces, noyses, crackes, and such like. But as touching the very words, *Portentum* is that which foreshewеth some thing to come, as when straunge bodies appeare in the aire, or blazing starres, or thunder in faire weather, or whirle windes do chaunce. Festus saith, that albeit *Portentum* be a naturall thing, yet it happeneth sildome, and doth betoken some thing to come to passe after a certaine season.

Portentum.

Ostentum.

Ostentum, is some straunge thing, which sheweth some thing to come to effect speedily. They giue the like examples of them both.

Prodigium.

Prodigium, is a thing which albeit it often chaunce by course of nature, yet notwithstanding it doth alwaies betoken some euill thing, being called *Prodigium*, as it were of *porro agendum*, to be done afterward.

Monstrum.

Monstrum, is that which happeneth against nature, as when any thing is brought forth hauing members belonging to an other kinde: the which is also called *Promonstrum*, as who should say, *Porro aliquid monstrans, sine monens*, that is, shewing or warning some thing to happen afterward. Notwithstanding these termes are many times confounded together, and taken in one signification, and that because they respect one ende, that is, to tell before or giue warning of things to come. The vaine visions whereon we here intreat, appertaine nothing to naturall philosophers, neither yet these things which we haue ioyned with them. For if a sodaine cracke, or sound, or groning, or rumbling, as though the house would fall, or if any other thing chance which standeth by naturall reason, it doth not properly belong vnto this matter which we haue in hand. But letting these things passe, we will by Gods helpe and aide come nearer to the matter it selfe.

Melan-

CHAP. II.

Melancholike persons, and mad men, imagine many things which in verie deed are not.



There haue bin very many in al ages, which haue vtterly denied that there bee any spirits or straunge sightes. The Philosophers of Epicurus sect, did iest & laugh at all those things which were reported of them, and counted them as fained and counterfeyt, by the which only children and fooles, and plaine simple men were made afraide. When Cassius, who was an Epicurian, vnderstood by Brutus, that he had séene a certaine vision, he (as Plutarch doth testifie) indeuoured to attribute the matter vnto naturall causes. We read in the 23. chapter of the Actes of the Apostles, that the Sadducees did not beléeue there should be any Resurrection of the dead, and that they denied there were any spirites or angels: Yea and at this day, many good & godly men beléeue those things to be but tales, which are talked of to and fro concerning those imagined visions: partly because in all their life, they neuer saw any such, and partly or rather especially, because in time past men haue bin so often deceiued with apparitions, visions and false miracles done by Monkes and Priestes, that now they take things ý are true, to be as vtterly false. Whatsoeuer the cause is, it may be proued, by witnesse of many writers, and by daily experience also, that spirites and strange sightes do sometime appeare, and that in very deed many strange and maruelious things do happen.

Some men deny there are Spirits.

Act. 23.

True it is, that many men do falsly perswade themselues that they see or heare ghoasts: for that which they imagine they see or heare, proceedeth either of melancholie, madnesse, weakenesse of the senses, feare, or of some other perturbation: or else when they see or heare beasts, vapors, or some other naturall thing, then they vainly suppose, they

haue sene sightes I wotte not what, as hereafter I will shewe particularly by many and notable examples.

There is no doubt, but that almost al those things which the common people iudge to be wonderfull sightes, are nothing lesse than so. But in the meane season it cannot be denied, but that straunge sightes, and many other such lyke things, are sometimes heard and also sene.

Sundry imaginations of melancholike persons.

And first it cannot be denied, but that some men which either by dispositions of nature, or for that they haue sustained great miserie, are now become heauie and full of melancholy, imagine many times with themselues being alone, miraculous and straunge things. Sometimes they affirme in great sothe, that they verily heare and se this or that thing, whiche notwithstanding neither they, nor yet any other man did once se or heare. Which thing we sometimes se by experience to be true in those men, which be troubled with great headache, or subiect to other diseases of the bodie, or cannot take rest in the night, or are distraughted of their wittes. These which dwell with suche kinde of men, when they here them tell such absurd tales, such straunge things, and such maruellous visions, albeit they pitie their vnfortunate estate, yet can they not many times containe themselues from laughing. Aristotle in his booke *de rebus mirandis*, writeth of a certaine man distraught of his wittes, who going into the Theatre of *Abydos* a Cittie of *Asia*, when no man was therein, and there sitting alone, by clapping of his hands, signified that he liked as well euery thing there, as if some Comedie or Tragedie had bin notably set forth on a stage.

Theatrum a place to behold plaies and pastimes in.

The verie lyke Historie hath Horace, in his second booke of Epistles, of a certain man, who comming into the Theatre at *Argos*, behaued himselfe euen as the other man did: And when his kinsfolke through the helpe of good Phisitians, had restored him to his right wittes againe, he was very angry with them, saying, that he neuer liued

more

more pleasantly than while he was beside himselfe. Atheneus lib. 12. writeth of one Trasilaus, whose braines were so distempered, that he verily supposed all the ships which arrived at Port Piræus, to be his owne: he would number them, he commaunded the Mariners to launch from shore, and when they returned after their voyage home againe, he as much reioyced as if he had bene owner of all wherewith they were laden. The same man affirmed, that in all the time of his madnesse he lived a verie pleasant life, vntill the Phisitian had cured him of his disease. I my selfe haue seene a man, Iohannes Leonardus Sertorius by name, whom very honest and graue men, which knew him well, would testifie to be a godly man, which was throughly perswaded with himselfe, that he could proue our Religion which we now professe, to be true and Catholike, euen by a miracle from heauen as sometime Helias did. He desired the Magistrates of certain Countries to call togither their Papists, and Protestants: for he was readie (he sayd) to shewe this miracle, and in case he didit not openly before them all, he refused not to sustain any kynd of punishment. The lyke reason is also of other men whiche are besides themselues: for they take on them maruellous things, either because they haue mused long time on some matter conceiued in their minds, as cunning Artificers oftentimes do: or because they haue bin long vexed with sickenesse, or else because they loue extremely. You shall finde some that imagine themselues as it were armed with horns of an Ore: other appeare to themselues to be erthen vessels, and therfore they will shun euery thing for feare they be broken.

Ioannes Sertorius.

Of such an one writeth Galene, *De locis affectis lib. 3 cap. 6.* and also *lib. 4 cap. 1.* Other suppose themselues dead, other thinke themselues great Princes, other to be learned men, other to be Prophets & Apostles, & therfore they will foretel things to come. The same he writeth of them that are taken with frenzie: and namely, of one Theophilus a Phisitian,

Ste. Ludouic. Cælius. li 17. ca. 2. antiquitat.

Galen de locis affectus. Libro de Simtomarum diff. chap. 3.

who in other things was wise, and coulde dispute wel and perfectly knowe euery man: yet notwithstanding, hee thought there were certain minstrels did haunt that corner of his house where he vsed to lye, and that they tuned their pypes and played on them euery daye: And hée verily thoughte, that he sawe them, some sitting, and some standing, and in such sorte continually pyping without intermission, that they ceased at no time, neither in the day, nor in the night. And therfore he neuer ceased to crie, and to commaunde his seruants to driue them out of his doores. When he was throughly recouered of his sickneſſe, then he tolde all other things which euery one of them had sayd or done: and also he called to mind the imaginations which he conceiued of the tediousneſſe of the minstrels.

Paulus Aegineta.

Licanthropia.

Paules Aegineta writeth in his thirde booke and xv. chap. that those that are taken with *Licanthropia* (which is a kynde of madneſſe) leape out of their houses in the night, in all things imitating the nature of wolues, and that vntill it ware day, they kéep about the graues of dead men. Moreouer, somtimes the diuel (enemie to mankinde) so deceiueth men, that they séeme vnto them selues to bée beastes. Wherof Augustin writeth In Geneſin ad litteram lib. 7. cap. 11. they which are bitten with madde Dogges are afraide of water. This diseaſe they call *Hidrophobiam*: out of which Aegineta lib. 5. ca. 3 reporteth, that they which are troubled with this diseaſe, loking on the water, and béeing brought vnto it, flée from them some: other vtterly refuse all kind of moisture: and that there are some which barke like Dogges, and bite them that come vnto them. Rufus shewing the cause of their feare, saith that they suppoſe they sée in the water the shadowe of the Dog which bitte them.

Augustine vpon Geneſis.

Hidrophobia.

Rufus.

Ephialtes the maare.

Ephialtes, which the Phisitions call the Maare, is a diseaſe of the stomacke, concerning which, reade Paulus Aegineta li. 3 cap. 6. Many which are taken with this diseaſe, imagine

imagine that a man of monſtrous ſtature ſitteth on them, which with his hands violently ſtoppeth their mouth, that they can by no meanes cry out, and they ſtriue with their armes and hands to driue him away, but all in vain. Some led with vaine fantaſie, thinke him who oppreſſeth them, to crépe vp by little and little on the bed, as it were to deceiue them, and anon to runne downe. They ſéeme alſo to themſelues to heare him. This diſeaſe is called by an other name μιγαλίον, and μιγάμων.

Madde men which haue vtterly loſt the vſe of reaſon, or are vexed by Gods permiſſion, with a Diuell, whome the Goſpell calleth δαιμονιζομένους, do maruellous thinges, talke of many viſions and diuers other matters. Their ſight deceiueth them, in ſo much as they miſtake one man for another: which thing we ſée by experience, in Bedleme houſes where madde and frantike men are kept. We read that Aiax toke the matter ſo grieuouſly, when Achilles armour was adiudged vnto Vliſſes, that becomming mad through griefe, and drawing out his ſworde, he ſet vpon herds of ſwine, ſuppoſing that he fought with the whole army of the Grecians. Afterwards hanging vp two of the greateſt of them on poſtes, with rayling words he whipped them, thinking one of them to be Agamemnon, the other Vliſſes, of whom with the firſt he was angry as an euil iudge, with the other bicauſe he was by him vanquiſhed in iudgement. But afterwards when he came againe to himſelfe, for very ſhame he ſlew himſelfe. It hath many times chaunced in battaile, that the ſouldiers falling into great fury, their captaines haue bene forced to take away their armour, becauſe by rage they toke their own felowes for enemies, and began to ſet on them violently. Madmen.

Tertullianus ſaith thus: Thoſe which are mad ſée one man in an other, as Oreſtes ſaiue his mother in his ſiſter, Aiax beheld Vliſſes in an heard of ſwine, Athamas and Agaue wilde beaſtes in their owne children, &c. Tertullian.

CHAP. III.

Fearefull men, imagine that they see and heare straunge things.

THat whiche we haue hitherto spoken concerning melancholicke men, and men out of their wits, may also be vnderstood of timorous and fearefull men. For if any man be timorous by nature, or subiect to feare through great daungers, or by some other wayes, he also imagineth straunge things which indéed are not so, especially if he haue in him any store of melancholy. Women, which for the most part are naturally giuen to feare more than men, (for which cause S. Peter in his first Epistle speaking of the dutie of married folks, calleth them the weaker vessell,) do more often suppose they sée or heare this or that thing, than men do. And so do young women, because commonly they ars afraide. If when men sit at the table, mention be made of spirites and elues, many times women and children are so afraide that they dare scarce go out of doores alone, least they should méete with some euill thing: and if they chaunce to heare any kinde of noise, by and by they thinke there are some spirites behinde them, such vaine perswasions they haue. A cowardly souldiour iudgeth his enemies to be more in number than they are: the noyse of a leafe being moued so affrighteth him (which thing God in his lawe threatneth his people of *Israel*, except they do their duties) that he betaketh himself to his héeles: if he but heare a woodspeck with his bill beating on a trée, he straight thinketh the enemy readie to leape on his shoulders: yea if he heare but a mouse moue, by and by his heart is in his hose. These and such like things neuer trouble a stout and couragious souldier.

2. *Pet.* 3.

And

And yet sometimes in the chase, lustie souldiers flying away from their companie, are so troubled in minde, that they thinke their friends enemies, and cannot tell in the world where they are, and whither they go: all the which commeth by feare.

Plutarche in his booke *De sera numinis vindicta*, reporteth a marueilous and notable history, of one called Bessus: who after he had murthered his father, hid himselfe a long season. But on a time as he went to supper, espying a swallowes neast, with his speare he thrust it downe: and when those which supped togither with him, misliked and abhorred his cruelty (for we like not those men that trouble little birdes and other beastes, because we iudge them austere and cruell) he answered: haue they not (saieth hee) falsly accused me, a great while crying out on me, that I haue slaine and murthered my father. Those which were present, being striken with great admiration, reported these his words to the king, who immediately caused him to bee tormented, and examining the matter diligently, at the last found him guiltie, and punished him as a manquiller of his owne father. Hereof ye may gather what feare can do: the swallowes coulde not speake, and yet he perswaded himselfe that they vpbrayed him with murthering his father. Euen so many through feare, imagine that they heare and see many thinges whiche in deede are meere trifles. Plutarche.

Procopius in the beginning of the warres of *Italie*, declareth, that as Theodoricus satte at meate, after he had put to death Boethius and Symmachus his sonne in lawe, a fishes head being brought before him, he sawe in it the countenance of Symmachus looking horribly, which byting the nether lip with lowring eyes seemed to threaten him, wherewith the King being sore abashed, fell into a greeuous sickneese, wherof he afterwards died. Yea feare if it be vnmea- Theodoricus imagining that he seeth Symmachus.

vnmeasurable maketh vs to abhorre those thinges, which otherwise should be comfortable vnto vs. The apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ may be examples hereof. Who in the night season being in greate daunger in the Sea, when they sawe Christe walking on the water approching towards them wer marueilously appalled. For they supposed they sawe a Spirit, and cried out for feare. But the Lorde came to deliuer them out of that present daunger wherein they were. After his resurrection they were marueilously affraide, and as S. Luke saith, they verily supposed they sawe a Spirit, when in deede he appeared vnto them in his owne body. Therfore the lord comforteth & hartneth them saying: Behold my hands & my fæt, for I am euẽ he: hãndle me and sée: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones as ye sée I haue. They through great ioy could not beléeue it, but marueiled at it. Héere thou séest, by feare it came to passe, that the Disciples supposed ỳ Lord him self to haue bin a ghost. And therfore no man ought to marueil if we hindered by feare, mistake one man for an other, and perswade our selues that we haue séene spirits, whereas no such were. They which are of stout and hautie courage, free from all feare, seldome times sée any spirits. It is reported of the Scithians, a warlike natiõ dwelling in mountains (from whom it is thought the Turkes take their originall) that they neuer sée any vaine sightes of spirits. Authors write that Lions are not feared with any bugs: for they are full of stomacke and deuoide of feare.

Matth. 14.

Luke. 24.

Stout and corragious men seldom see any Spirits.

CHAP. IIII.

Men which are dull of seeing and hearing, imagine many things which in verie deed are not so.

They whiche are weake of sight, are manye times in suche sorte deceyued, that they beholde one man in steade of an other. Poore-blinded men whome the Grékes call μύωπας, whiche can not

sée

ſée any thing, except it be verie neare their eyes (as for the moſt part ſtudents are, which night and day turne ouer their bookes) are ſo much deceiued in their ſight, that they are many times aſhamed to vtter what they haue thought they haue ſéene. And it ſtandeth by naturall reaſon, that an oare ſéemeth to be broken in the water: and a tower foure cornered, a farre off ſheweth to be rounde. Thoſe which drinke wine immoderately, in ſuch ſort that their eyes begin to ware dimme, and ſtare out of their heads, like hares which haue bin caried hanging on a ſtaffe a mile or twaine, ſée things farre otherwiſe than ſober men doe. They ſuppoſe they ſée two candles on the table, when there is but one: deſiring to reach the potte, they put their hand amiſſe. Drunken men ſee ſtraunge things.

In Euripides Tragedie named Bacchis, Pentheus affirmeth, that he ſeeth two Sunnes and two citties of *Thebes*: For his braines were marueilouſly diſtempered. It is a common ſaying, that if wine haue the victorie, all things ſéeme to haue turned vpſide downe: trées to walke, mountaines to be moued, and riuers to run againſt the head, &c. Euripides.

Salomon exhorteth all men from drunkenneſſe, in his Prouerbs, cap. 23. ſhewing what diſcommodities enſue therof, and amongſt other things he ſaith thus: Thy eyes ſhall ſée ſtraunge (to wit) viſitions and marueilous apparitions. For as timorous men imagine miraculous things, euen ſo doe drunken men, who of purpoſe corrupt and ſpoile their ſight. And albeit God ſhew many wonders in the aire, and in the earth, to the ende he may ſtir men vp from idleneſſe and bring them to true repentaunce, yet notwithſtanding, we muſt thinke that dronken men which ſit vp vntill midnight, do often ſay, that haue ſéene this or that viſion, they haue beheld this or that wonder, when as indéed they are vtterly deceiued. For in caſe they had returned home in due ſeaſon, and not ouercharged themſelues with too much wine, no ſuch thing had appeared vnto them. For indéede their eyeſight had not bene blinded. Doth it not often come Pro. 23.

to passe, that when men are once throughly warmed with wine, they mistake one for another, of whom they thought they were abused in word or deede, and violently flie on them with weapon? The place before alleaged out of Salomon, may also be understood to this purpose: Thy eyes shall see straunge (to wit,) women, to lust after them. For experience teacheth vs that men being drunke, assaie to ravish matrones and maidens, which being sober they would neuer once thinke vppon. Wine immoderately taken, is the nurse of rashe boldnesse and filthie lust.

Some see themselues.

Aristotle writeth, that some men through the feblenesse of their sight, beholding in the aire neare vnto them (as it were in a glasse) a certaine image of themselues, suppose they see their owne angels or soules: and so as the Prouerbe is, they feare their owne shadow. Although men in obscure and darke places can see nothing, yet do they not (I pray you) imagine they see diuers kindes of shapes and colours. And we many times suppose those things which we see, to be farre otherwise than indeed they are.

It is well knowne, a mans sight may be so deceiued, that he verily thinkes that one deuoureth a sword, spitteth out money, coales, and such like: that one eateth bread, and spitteth forth meale: one drinketh wine, which after runneth out of his forehead: that one cutteth off his fellowes head, which afterwardes he setteth on againe: and that a Cocke seemeth to drawe after him a huge beame of timber, &c. Moreouer it may be brought to passe by naturall things, as by perfumes and such like, that a man would sweare in earnest, that all men sitting at the table with him, haue no heds at all, or else that they are like the heads of asses: & that somtimes a vine spreadeth it self as it were ouer al the house, whē indeed it is a mere deceit, or a plaine iugling cast. Of which matter there be bookes commonly set abroad. The like reason is in hearing, & in the other senses. Those men whose hearing is somewhat decaied, many

Hearing deceiueth.

times

times ſéeme in their owne imagination, to heare the noyſe of boyſterous winde, or violent tempeſt, the ſparkling of fire, the roaring of waters ſodeinly increaſed, ſinging and ſounding of inſtruments, and alſo the iangling of belles, when as indéed theſe things are not ſo, but only chaunce by default of hearing: for others which are conuerſant with them, hauing the right vſe of hearing, do not heare any ſuch thing at all. Somtimes in very déed ſuch things are heard, as the crackling of wainſcot walles, and ſuch like, which are naturall ſignes of ſome tempeſt ſhortly after enſuing.

There are alſo certaine hollowe places, through the which the winde whiſzing, giueth a pleaſant ſound, as it were through a pipe, much like vnto ſinging, ſo that men wonder verie much thereat. We reade in writers of Philoſophie, that the very ſame alſo chaunceth in bankes of riuers, which bende a little in compaſſe. Hearing is alſo deceiued when we thinke we heare thunder, and it is indéed but the rumbling of ſome Carte. There be many which thinke they handle ſomething, and yet are deceiued: If men ſicke of the ague, drinke wine of the beſt and ſwéeteſt ſorte, yet they thinke it is more bitter than Gall: if they eate pottage neuer ſo good, yet they iudge it vnſauorie: which thing commeth not of any faulte in the Cooke, but of the mouth and ſtomacke whiche is diſtempered with ſickneſſe. For vnto them which haue abundance of choller, all things ſéeme bitter. And euen ſo it commeth to paſſe, that a man ſuppoſeth he ſeeth, heareth, féeleth, or is felt of ſome ſpirit, when indéed it is not ſo, and yet no man can perſwade him the contrary.

The ſenſe of feeling is deceiued.

If feare and weakneſſe of the ſight and of other ſenſes méete togither, then men fall into ſtrange and maruellous imaginations, beléeuing things vtterly falſe, to be verie true: Neither will they be brought from their owne opinions by any meanes or reaſon.

VVeakeneſſe of the ſight and feare.

We reade that not only perticular and priuate men, but also whole armies of souldiers generally haue bene so deceiued, that they haue verily thought their enemies hard at their heeles, when as no man followed. And hereof haue proceeded many horrible fightes in battaile.

Comineus. Comineus, a knight and diligent writer of histories, in the ende of his first booke of the Acts of Lewes the 11. King of *Fraunce*, writeth, that when Charles Duke of *Burgundie*, with other Princes, had remoued their armie to *Paris*, they vnderstood by their espials, that the nert day the king had determined to set on them with all his power of men. Wherefore the next day Charles sent out certaine horsemen to view his enemies: who comming forth, by reason that the element was somewhat darke, supposed they sawe a huge number of pikes and speares, but when they had passed a little further and that the aire was a little clearer, they vnderstood the same place wherein they iudged the king to be with all his armie, to be planted and ouergrowne with many high thistles, which a far off shewed as it had bene long speares. For the night beguileth mens eyes. And therefore none ought to maruell, if trauellers towardes night or at midnight, mistake stones, trées, stubbes, or such like, to be spirites or elues. We reade in the last booke of the kings the 3. chap. that after the death of king Achab, the Moabites reuolted from Ioram his sonne, wherefore he desired Iosaphat to aide him, and with all his power he determined to make warre on the Moabites, to reduce them to obedience, and subiection. Which thing when the Moabites heard, they prepared to defend themselues, so many as were able to beare armour. But when they had set forward verie earely in the morning against their enemies, supposing in the rising of the Sunne, the waters which God had miraculously brought out to be redde, they said amongst themselues: Surely the two Kings haue encountred together, and eache haue de-

King. 4.

ſtroyed other, whereuppon they running on heapes without order, to ſpoile the Iſraelites Tents, were by them vanquiſhed and ſlaine: here you ſée all the Annie miſtooke water in ſtead of bloud.

CHAP. V.

Many are ſo feared by other men, that they ſuppoſe they haue heard or ſeene Spirits.

FUrthermore, it commeth to paſſe many times that not only pleaſant and mery conceited men, but alſo ſpitefull and malitious men, chaunging their apparell, make others extreamely affraide. It is a common cuſtome in many places, that at a certaine time of the yeare, one with a nette or vizarde on his face maketh Children affraide, to the ende that euer after they ſhould labour and bee obedient to their Parentes, afterward they tel them that thoſe which they ſaw, were Fugs, Witches and Hagges, which thing they verily beléeue, and are commonly, miſerably affraide. Howbeit, it is not expedient alwayes ſo to terrefie Children. For ſometimes through great feare they fall into dangerous diſeaſes, and in the night crie out, when they are faſt a ſléepe. Salomon teacheth vs to chaſten children with the rod, and ſo to make them ſtand in awe: he doth not ſay, we muſt beare them in hand they ſhall be deuoured of Bugges, Hags of the night, and ſuch like monſters. Salomons pro.

Many times, pleaſant & mery yong men, diſguiſe themſelues like vnto Diuels, or elſe ſhroud themſelues in white ſhéetes to make other men affraide: with whome if ſimple men chaunce to méete, they make no doubt of the matter, but verily thinke they haue ſéene ſpirites, and ſtraunge ſightes. And yet it is not alwayes the ſafeſt way, ſo to deceiue

ceiue men with ieſts and toyes, for many examples might be brought to ſhewe how euill ſome men haue ſped hereby. It is an vſuall and common thing that yong men merily diſpoſed, when they trauell by the way, comming to their Inne at night, tie ropes to the bed ſide, or to the couerlet or garments, or elſe hide themſelues vnder the bedde, and ſo counterfeiting themſelues to be Spirites, deceiue and mocke their fellowes. It chaunced once at *Tigurin* where we dwel, that certaine pleaſant yong men diſguiſing themſelues, daunced about the Churchyard, one of them playing on a bére with two bones, as it were on a drumme. Which thing when certaine men had eſpied, they noyſed it about the citie, how they had ſéene dead men daunce, and that there was great danger, leaſt there ſhould ſhortly enſue ſome plague or peſtilence.

Daunſing Spirits.

Moreouer, it is well knowne to all men, that harlots, and whoremongers, haue practiſed their wickedneſſe a long ſeaſon vnder this cloake and pretence, perſwading their family, that walking Spirites haunt the houſe, leaſt they ſhould bee taken with the déede doing, and that they might enioy their deſired loue. Many times ſuch buggers haue bin caught by the magiſtrates, and put to open ſhame. Théeues likewiſe vnder this colour haue many times robbed their neighbours in the night time, who ſuppoſing they heard the noyſe of walking Spirits, neuer went about to driue the théeues away. Touching this point, that an euil Spirit, by means of naturall things which haue ſtrange vertues, can do marueilous things, by deceiuing mens ſenſes, I will at this preſent ſpeake nothing.

Prieſts

CHAP. VI.

Prieſtes and Moncks fained themſelues to be Spirites: alſo how *Mundus* vnder this colour defiled *Paulina*, and *Tyrannus* abuſed many noble and honeſt matrones.

TO theſe thinges may bee added, that there haue bin in all ages certaine Prieſts, which practiſing ſtrange deuiſes, and giuing themſelues to Necromancie, haue bewitched fooliſh men that highly eſtéemed them, to the ende they might thereby encreaſe their riches, and follow their luſtfull pleaſures. Touching which matter, to the ende godly diſpoſed men may be the more héedfull, I will rehearſe a fewe hiſtories.

Ioſephus a writer of hiſtories, in his 18. booke and 4. chap. of Antiquities, remembreth a notorious déed which hapned at Rome, in the time of Tyberius Ceſa, vnder the pretence of ſacrificing to the goddeſſe Iſis. I will record the hiſtorie as it is tranſlated by Galenius, a very learned man. Ioſephus de antiquitatib.

There dwelled at Rome a woman named Paulina, no leſſe renoumed for honeſtie of life, than for the nobilitie of parentage: She was alſo very rich and excéding beautful, as one that was now in the floure of her age, and eſpecially adorned with the great vertue of chaſtitie, and married ſhe was to one Saturnius, a man worthie of ſuch a wife. It chaunced that Decius Mundus, a famous yong knight, became very much enamored with her: and becauſe ſhe was a woman of greater wealth than that ſhe might be won with rewardes and money, ſo much the more was this louers madneſſe inflamed, in ſo much that he ſtuck not to proffer her for one night. 200000. groates. The Atticke groat and the Romain peny are by common valuation all one. Budeus accounteth one of them worth 8. Cruſados: ſo this ſumme according to his reckoning, amounteth to 26000. Florens. Paulina and Mundus.

And

And yet not being able by these means to moue her constant mind, bicause he could not endure the rage of his loue, he determined, by abstinence and hunger to make an ende both of life and loue togither. This determination was not vnknowne to Ide, Mundus Fathers bondseruaunt, a maide cunning in many artes, but such as were not to be liked. She maruellously grœued with the yong mans wilfulnesse in abstaining frō meat, talking with him, by swéete and flattring words began to encourage him, assuring him that she would bring to passe, that he should at his pleasure embrace Paulina. After that he had gladly condiscended to her entreatie, she telleth him she must nœdes haue fiftie thousand groates to ouerthrow the Gentlewomans chastitie. So putting the yong man in good hope, and receiuing as much mony as she required, because she wel knew Paulina could not be wonne with mony, she deuiseth a new way to deceiue her. Understanding therefore that she was maruellously addicted to the worshipping of Isis, she inuenteth these meanes: She talketh with some of Isis Priests, and hauing receiued sure promise of them to kéepe all things secrete, and (which is most effectuall) hauing shewed their reward, promising presently 25000. groates, and when they had done the déed, other 25000. she openeth vnto them the yong mans loue, beséeching them to helpe by al meanes possible, that shee might enioy the same. They touched at the heart with desire of the mony, gently promised their helpe. Wherefore the eldest of them spéedily goeth to Paulina, and being admitted to her spéech, after hee had obtained to talke with her in secrete, he declareth that he is come vnto her being sent by the great God Anubis (this Anubis hauing a head lyke to a Dogge, was worshipped togither in one Temple with Isis) who is maruellously in loue with her beautie, and doth commaund her to repaire vnto him. She ioyfully receiued the message, and forthwith vaunteth among her familiar acquaintaunce, that the God

Anubis,

Anubis hath vouchsafed to loue her: And shée telleth her husband, that shée must suppe and lye with him. Which thing was so much the more easily graunted vnto her, for that her husband had had good experience and knowledge of her chastitie. Whereupon shée goeth to the Temple, and after supper when time of rest drew neare, being shut in by the priest, shée méeteth with Mundus, who had priuily hidden himselfe there, the darkenesse bringing them togither, without any suspition. And so all that night shée satisfied the yong mans desire, supposing she had done pleasure vnto the God. Afterwards he departing from hir, Paulina early in the morning, before the priestes (who were priuie to this deceit) were stirring, returned home to her husband, to whome she recounteth her méeting with Anubis, and also with great words setteth out the same amongst her gossips and friends. They could not beléeue her, considering the nature of the thing, and yet could they not chuse but maruell, waying the great chastitie of the woman. Thrée dayes after the déede done, Mundus méeting by chaunce with his beloued, saide vnto her: O well done Paulina, thou hast saued me 200000. groats wherewith thou mightest haue encreased thy riches, and yet notwithstanding thou hast fulfilled my desire, for I way it not that thou hast despised Mundus, sith vnder the title of Anubis, I haue enioyed my desired lust, which words said, he departed. But the woman then first perceiuing this villany, began to teare her garments, and opening the whole matter vnto her husband, beséecheth him that he suffer not such a notorious mockery to go vnpunished. Her husband then declareth the whole matter to the Emperoure Tiberius: who after he had learned all things by diligent examination, trusseth vp these iugling priests on the gallowes, togither with Ide, the author of all this mischiefe, by whose meanes chiefly the chastitie of this noble Gentlewoman was defiled: and ouerthrowing their temple, he commaun-

ded the Image of Isis to be sunke in the riuer of *Tibris*. But it pleased him to chasten Mundus with banishment, a more gentle kind of punishmẽt, ascribing his fault to ỹ weaknes of his immoderat loue. By this history it may easily be gathered how sathan in times past bewitcht the Gentils, and how their priests persuaded them ỹ their Gods appearing in visible forme spake this or ỹ vnto them, which notwithstãding were very false. Vnder the pretence of worshipping their gods, they gaue thẽselues to wicked deuises. For how often may we wel thinke they cõmitted abhominable mischief (although indeed ỹ matter it selfe neuer came to light.) If they brought it to passe, ỹ Mundus by their meanes enioyed his desired loue, surely there is no doubt, but ỹ they thẽselues vnder the colour of holinesse deflowred other mẽs daughters & wiues: for otherwise this deuise could neuer haue bin so ready in mind. This matron would neuer haue bin so wel cõtent, vnles ỹ very same had bin practised with other dames before. Neither yet wold her husbãd haue suffered her to lodge in the Church all night. What need was there for ỹ gods to haue beds prepared for thẽ in ỹ Church, whẽ it was most aparant they neuer lodged in thẽ. Princes also may learne by ỹ example of Tiberius, although he were a wicked tyrant, how such varlets are to be restrained. To this purpose maketh ỹ history which Ruffinus a Priest of *Aquileia* reporteth in Li. 11. ca. 25. of his ecclesiastical history.

Ruffinus.

Tyrannus a wicked priest.

There was a priest in *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, vowed to Saturn, whose name was Tyrãnus. This mã as it had bin frõ the mouth of god, vsed to say vnto al such noble & principall men, whose Ladies he liked & lusted after, that Saturne had cõmanded, ỹ such a ones wife shuld lie al night in the temple. Then he which heard ỹ message, reioycing much ỹ the god vouchsafed to call for his wife, decking her vp brauely, & giuing her great gifts (forsooth lest she shuld be refused because she came emptie) sent her forth vnto ỹ temple, where the woman being shut vp in the presence of al men, Tiran-

nus

nus whē he had fast locked the doores, surrendring the keyes departed his wayes. Afterwards in great silence passing through priuie caues vnder the ground, he issued forth out of the open holes into the image of Saturne: which image was made hollow in the backe, and cunningly fastned to the wall. And as the candles burned within the Church, he spake sodeinly vnto the woman (giuing great eare, and praying deuoutly) through ẏ image made of hollow brasse, in such sort that the vnhappie woman, trembled betwēne feare and ioy, because she thought her selfe worthie of the spēch of so great a god. Now after the baudie god had talked his pleasure to bring her in great feare, or to prouoke her to lust and wantonnesse, sodeinly all the lightes were put out with the spreading abroad of sheets, by a certain cunning deuise. And then descending out of the image, he committed adultery with the woman much abashed and afraid, vsing most prophane and wicked gloses vnto her. When he had thus dealt a long season, almost with all the wiues of these silly Gentlemen, it chaunced in the end, that a certain chast Gentlewoman began to abhorre and loath the deede, and marking the matter more heedfully, knew it to be Tyrannus voice: and thereupon returning home againe, declared the slie conueiance of this horrible deed vnto her husband. He being set on fire with rage for the iniurie done vnto his wife, or rather vnto his selfe, apprehēded Tyrannus, & brought him to ẏ place of torments, where being conuicted he cōfessed al ẏ matter, & thē other deceits being likewise detected, al shame & dishonor was spred throughout the houses of ẏ Pagans: the mothers were found adulterers, fathers incestuous persons, and their children illegittimate and bastardes. Which thing so soone as it was brought to light and noysed abroad, togither both Church and image, and wickednesse, and all was vtterly subuerted and destroied. We reade that Numa Pompilius bare the people of *Rome* in hande that hee hadde familiar company with

Egeria a Goddesse of the waters, to the ende he might purchase credit and authoritie to his lawes.

CHAP. VII.

Timotheus Aelurus, counterfeiting himself to be an Angell, obteined a bishopricke: foure Monkes of the order of Preachers, made many vaine apparitions at *Berna*.

IT might be somewhat borne withall, if these things had only chaunced among the Gentiles, which were without the word of God, if we did not evidently see the like happen oftentimes amongest Christians, and in case it were not to be feared least many such things should happen euen at this day also. For it is

Lippis & tonsoribus notum

well knowne to all men, that there haue bene many Magiciens, Sollerers, and Coniurers, and those especially Monkes and Priests, who would easily counterfeit visions, and miracles, and familiar talking with soules.

Theodorus.

Theodorus Lector, collectaneorum ex historia ecclesiastica lib. 1. writeth of Timotheus Aelurus, that he, before Proterius bishop of Alexandria was put to death, gaping for the bishoppricke, in the night clad in blacke apparrell walked about the celles of the Monkes, and calling each man by his name, they answering, sayd vnto them, that he a spirit, one of Gods seruants came to warne them, that euery one reuolting from Proterius, should ioyne himselfe vnto Timotheus. And by his craft and deceit obteining the bishoppricke, hee made great vproares in the Church of God. Here I cannot refraine my selfe as touching this present matter, but that I rehearse a famous history, of

Foure Monks of Berna.

foure Monkes of the order of Preachers (who were burnt at Berna in Heluetia, in the yeare of our Lord 1509. the last day of May) by what subtilties they deceiued a poore

simple

ſimple Frier whom they had lately reteined into their monaſtery: concerning which thing, many bookes were written at the ſame time when theſe things were done, which are yet extant both in the Latin and in the Germain tong. There was great contention betwéen the Monkes of ỹ order of Preachers, and the Friers Minorites, or Franciſcans, touching the conceptiõ of ỹ virgin Mary. The Friers preachers affirmed, that ſhe euen as other men alſo was conceiued in originall ſin, that the Franciſcans denied and ſtoutly denied. At the laſt the matter came to that iſſue, that the preachers determined to auouch and proue their opinion by falſe and fayned miracles: taking aduiſement in a certaine Synode (which they call a chapter) holden at *Vimpenium* a cittie of *Germanie*, where the moſt conuenient and fitteſt place for this matter might be founde: and at the laſt they choſe out *Berna* in *Heluetia*, becauſe the people there were plaine and ſimple, and giuen to the warres. Foure therefore of the chiefeſt in the Abbay of the order of preachers beganne the pageant at *Berna*: and becauſe the Supprior one of the foure, was well ſcene in coniuring, he bounde the Diuell to ioyne in councell with them by what meanes they might beſt bring their purpoſe to paſſe. Hée appearing vnto them in the likeneſſe of a Negro or blacke Moꝛian, promiſed them all that he could do, vnder this condition, that they ſhould yéeld and giue themſelues vnto him, which thing they willingly did, deliuering vnto him a writing written with their owne hand and blood. And it chaunced at the ſame time very fitly, that one Iohn Iezerus, a plaine fellowe, a Taylour by occupation, was choſen into their order, who ſéemed to be verie fit for their purpoſe. They tryed him by throwing ſtones into his chamber in the night time, making a great noyſe, and fayning themſelues to be Spirits. The matters ſéemed vnto them, euen from the beginning, that it would take good ſucceſſe. On a certaine day being Friday, the Supprior ſhrouding

himselfe in a sheete, togither with other Spirites, whom he had coniured vp for this purpose, brake into the Friers cell with great force and noyse, faining with many teares, that he desired his ayd and help. Now had they priuily conueied Holy water and the Reliques of Saints into his Cell before. The poore Frier halfe dead with feare, denied that he could by any meanes helpe him, recommending himselfe to Christ our Sauior, and to his holy mother. The Spirite aunswered, that it was in his and his brethrens power to deliuer him out of this miserie, if he would suffer himselfe for the space of fiue dayes, euery day to be whipped vntill the blood followed, and moreouer, cause eight Masses to be sung for his sake in S. Iohns Chappell, himselfe while they were sung, lying in the floore with his armes spread abroad. After hee tolde him that the next Friday before midnight, he wold come again with greater noyse, willing him in any wise not to be afrayd, for the Diuels could nothing hurt him, because he was an holy man. The next day this foolish Frier openeth all the matter to the ringleaders of this deuise, beseeching them to assist him, that the miserable soule might be deliuered. The matter was out of hand rumored about the Citie. The Monkes preached openly hereof in the pulpit, commending highly ỹ holinesse of their order, which euen hereby might be seene, for that the spirite craued helpe of them, and not of the wicked drunken Franciscans. At the time appointed, the spirite accompanied with other euill spirits, came againe with great noyse to the Friers Cell, who adiuring and coniuring him, questioned with him touching certaine points. The spirit shewed him who he was, and for what cause he was so miserably vexed: and withall gaue great thanks both vnto him and also to his fathers, for being touched w̃ remorse of him, adding, ỹ in case there were yet 30. Masses sung, and 4. Vigiles obserued, and ỹ he would yet once again whip himself vntil he bled, thẽ he shuld be clean deliuered out of most cruell

ell torments, which he had cõtinually endured a 160. yéers. He had conference with him also of other maruellous matters, which we néed not here to reherse. Afterwards ý same spirit appeared again vnto the Frier, and preferred the order of preachers before all others, bearing him in hand, that many of them which had bene aduersaries vnto this order, suffered most horrible torment in purgatorie, and that the citie of *Berna* should be vtterly ouerthrowne, except they banished ý Franciscans, and refused ý yeerly stipends which they receiued at the French kings hands. He also talked of sundry things which had hapned to the Frier (which thing they had learned before of him by meanes of auricular confession.) Moreouer he hartily thanketh the Frier for the great benefit of his deliuerance, giuing him to vnderstand, that he was now admitted into the eight degrée of Angels, and that he should say Masse there for his benefactors.

After these things thus done, an other night one comming vnto him in the apparell of a woman, said he was S. Barraba, whom he deuoutly serued, and told him ý the blessed virgin would shortly appear vnto him, and make ful answere vnto those questions which one of the Monkes had writtẽ in paper for him. This paper Barbara promised that she her self would deliuer vnto our Lady, which they should shortly after find in a holy place sealed & signed miraculously. The Frier vpon this reuealeth the whole matter vnto his fathers, desiring to be confessed of his sinnes, wherby he might be found worthy the apparition or séeing of our Lady. He willed them to search in ý halowed place for the scroll, which at the last they found in the Fratry (as they term it) where they had laid it before. Thẽ they caried it with great reuerẽce vnto the high alter, affirming ý it was sealed with Christs blood, and that the tapers lightned of their own accord. In the morning the virgin Mary appeared vnto him againe, rehearsing many things which her sonne Iesus commaunded her to tell vnto him: to wit, that Pope Iulius

was

was that holy man, which should reconcile the two orders in friendship againe, and institute and ordaine the feast of the defiled conception of our Lady, for she would send vnto the Pope a crosse marked with foure droppes of her sonnes blood, in signe that she was conceiued in originall sinne: and that they should find an other crosse marked with fiue drops of blood in their fratrie, which they must conuey to *Rome*, for the Pope would allowe and confirme it with large indulgences, and after return it to *Berna* again: other things likewise she said, whereof many things were both reported and written to and fro.

But in witnesse of the aforesaid things, the same Mary droue an yron nayle through the hande of the poore Frier, saying: this wounde shall be renewed in the day wherein my sonne was crucified, and in the feast of my sonnes bodie. After they toke a burning water made by Necromancie, by the which they taking away his senses, made foure other woundes in his bodie. And after that he came againe vnto himselfe, they bare him in hand that there was a certaine holy thing I wotte not what, which appeared about him. And when they sawe that many men came flocking about him to see this newe Christ, they taught him (for hée was of rude conditions) howe to behaue himselfe. And when they had giuen him a drinke bereauing him of his senses, and causing him to fome at the mouth, then they sayd he striued and wrestled with death, euen as Christ did in the mount Oliuet. After all this, another of them appeared vnto him, telling him many things: but ỳ Frier knowing him by his voyce, beganne to suspect and mislike the whole matter, and with violence thrust him from him. The next night the Frier himselfe appeared vnto him, saying that he was Mary of whome he had bene in doubt, and to the ende he should be out of all suspition, she had brought him the hoste of her sonnes bodie (for he brought him an hoste stiped in poyson) to the ende hée shoulde no more thinke he sawe

an

an euil ſpirite: he alſo affirmed, that he had brought a veſſel of glaſſe full of her ſonnes bloud, which he would giue vnto him, and vnto his Monaſterie. But the Frier, who alſo had this viſion in ſuſpition, anſwered: If (ſayde he) thou be not an euil ſpirit, rehearſe thy Pater noſter and thy Aue Maria with me. The Prior ſayde the Pater noſter, and afterward ſayd in the perſon of our Lady: Hayled am I Mary full of grace, the Lord be with me. &c. The Frier knowing the Priors voyce, caught a knife, and wounded him therewith, and when he defended himſelfe, the Frier ſtoutly reſiſted, and draue him backe. Theſe things thus done, the Suppriour béeing in good hope to reſtore all that they had loſt, appeared againe to the Frier, ſaying that he was S. Catherin of *Sena*, and therwith begun to chide him, for that he ſo diſcurteouſly had intreated the holy Virgin: adding moreouer, I am ſent (quoth he) to ſhewe thée, that the wounds which thou haſt in thy body, are the very true wounds of Chriſt, which neyther I, nor yet S. Francis hath, and that he enlarged with many words. Yet notwithſtanding, the Frier ſo entertayned him, that he was glad to ſaue him ſelfe with running away. Now bicauſe the Frier wold no longer be mocked at their hands, they, maruellouſly troubled, and almoſt at their wits ende, taking aduiſe among them ſelues, brake the matter vnto him, and tolde him, that in verie déede they frélý confeſſed many of thoſe apparitions which he had ſéene to be fayned, and that for no other cauſe, but to the ende he ſhould perſeuere in his profeſſion and Religion, howbeit the very effect of the matter was moſt true, and that he ought not to doubt, but that he bare the wounds of Chriſt in his body. And forſomuch as the matter was nowe knowen abroad, they earneſtly beſought him, that he would not refuſe to go on in the matter, for otherwiſe their order ſhould incurre open ſhame, and both he and they fall into preſent daunger, but in caſe he woulde perſiſt in his enterpriſed pur-

pose, the thing would fall out to his and their great aduantage. And so with fairer words, they perswaded him to make promise to be ruled by them hereafter.

After long instruction and teaching, they placed him on the altar of our Lady, kneeling on his knees within a chappell before the image of the holy virgine: Where one of the Monkes standing behinde a cloath, spake through a cane reede, as if it were Christ talking with his mother, in this wise: Mother why dost thou weepe: haue I not promised thee, ỹ whatsoeuer thou willest, shall be done? Wherto the image made answere. Therfore I weepe, because this businesse endeth no end. Then said the image of Christ: Beleeue mee mother, this matter shall be made manifest. This done, the Monke priuily departing, the chappell doores were shut. Assone as these things were scattered about the citie, by ỹ by there was a great thronging of people. Amongst whome also came foure monks, dissembling and fayning, that they knewe not what was there done, and therfore they commanded the doores to be opened, and after asked the Frier howe and after what sorte he came there. He answered them that he was carried by a spirit. And moreouer told them what words the image had spoken, and that he could by no meanes moue out of that place before that foure of the chiefest Aldermen were come vnto him, vnto whom he had certaine things to be declared: he also desired to receiue the holy sacrament. The Aldermen were forthwith called, and then the Frier declared vnto them, how the virgin Mary lamented and sorrowed, for that the citie of *Berna* should be shortly destroyed, for receiuing yearely pentiõs of the French king: Also for that they droue not the Franciscans out of their citie, who honoured her with the fayned tytle of vndefiled cõception. Vnto this his talke the Aldermen answered very little. By and by the other Monkes gaue him the host infected with poyson, which when he refused to receiue, they brought him an o-

ther,

ther, which he toke, then they led him with greate pompe into the quire, (for so they call the vppermost parte of the churche. The Frier & the other foure Monkes were sone after called before the Aldermen, to testifie the truth whether those things were so or not. But the foure fearing exceedingly least he should bewray something because they knew he suspected thē, endeuoured by all meanes to do him some priuie mischief by poyson giuen in his meate, & therefore they gaue him the sacrament dipped in poyson, which he presently cast vp againe by vomit: finally they so vexed and tormented him by so many wayes, that in the end he left the Colledge and ran away, and opened the whole matter to diuers and sundry men. In the meane time the Monkes dispatched two Legates or messengers to Rome, to obtaine a confirmation of these things of the Pope, that hereafter it should be vtterly vnlawfull for any man to contrary or mislike the same. And when these messengers were returned, (and as the Prouerbe is) thought themselues in a safe heauen, the noble Senate had commaunded the foure Monkes to be fast kept in prison: for they had learned the whole circumstance of the matter before of the Frier, whome they had committed to ward. And sparing neither labour nor mony, sent also vnto Rome, that they might perfectly knowe, what they should do in this matter. In the end both the Frier & the foure Monkes were all put to torments, and there confessed all the matter. And when they had bin openly conuicte of so many guiles, and horrible deeds, by the Popes permission they were first putte from the orders (which they commonly call degradation) and afterwards burned in the fire.

It was commonly reported, that in case the noble Senate of *Berna* hadde not prosecuted the matter with great constancie, and courage, the Cleargie woulde haue cloaked all the knauerie, and haue sette the authors at libertie. For they had greate cause to doubte, as it after

came to passe, lest they should lese their credit and authoritie amongst many of the orders of Monks, and that these things whereon the Popedome resteth, as it were vpon pillers, should now be had in great suspition with all men. For it is most euident, that after the impietie, deceit & wickednesse of these Monkes began to be knowne abroad, the opinion of the Cleargie began to decaie, and to be suspected more and more euery day, of good and godly men: when as they sayd this or that soule required their helpe: that tapers lighted of their own accord: that this or that image spake, wept, or moued it selfe from place to place: that this or that Saint endowed their monasterie with precious reliques: or that Crosses were sprinkeled with the blood of Christ: yea and although they had obteined confirmation of these matters from the Pope, yet notwithstanding many afterwards would in no wise beleeue it to be so. Likewise they would not bee perswaded, that this holy father falling into a traunce, saw any miraculous things: or that Francis and Catherin of *Sena*, bare the markes of Christes fiue woundes in their bodie.

Furthermore, not without great cause, men began to doubt of transubstantiation of bread into the body of Christ, sith they had so often poysoned the Sacrament: and also of those things which they chaunted vpon with open mouth, touching pardons, vigilies, orders, purgatorie, holy water, and satisfaction. For that we let passe many things, it is clearer then the day-light, euen by this historie, that many things haue bene beaten into the peoples heads touching these foresaid matters, which were only deuised and inuented by these idle bellies.

Of

CHAP. VIII.

Of a counterfait and deceiuing ſpirit at *Orleance* in *France*.



And that no man thinke the Friers Preachers alone to haue bene ſo bolde, and wicked, and ſo readie in deuiſing ſo many monſters, let vs hearken a while to a notable hiſtorie of the Franciſcan Friers, reported by Sleidane in the ninth booke of his Commentaries, concerning the ſtate of religion and the Common wealth in the time of Charles the fifth.

In the yeare (ſaith he) of our Lord 1534. the Franciſcan Monkes played a bloodie and deadly pageant at *Orleaunce* in *France*. The Maiors wife of the ſame Citie, when ſhée died, commaunded in her will, that ſhe ſhoulde be buried without any pompe or noyſe, ſolemnely vſed at that time. (So alſo William Bude, a rare and ſingular ornament of *Fraunce*, lying on his death bedde at *Paris*, in the yeare of our Lord 1540. in the month of Auguſt, left commaundement with his friendes to bury him without any great ſolemnitie and pompe.) The womans huſband, who reuerenced the memoriall of his wife, did euen as ſhe had willed him, and becauſe ſhe was buried in the Church of the Franciſcans, beſides her father and grandfather, gaue them in rewarde only fiue Crownes, whereas they hoped for a farre greater pray. Shortly after, it chaunced that as he felled certaine woods, and ſolde them, they deſired him to giue vnto them ſome parte of it freely without money: which hee flatly denied. This they take very greeuouſly, and whereas before they miſliked him, they deuiſed this meanes to bee reuenged: forſooth to report that his wife was damned for euer. The chiefe workemen and framers of this tragedy were Colimannus, and Stephanus Atrebatenſis, both doctors of diuinitie, and Colimannus a great con-

iurer, hauing all his implements in a readinesse, which he wonted to vse in such businesse: and thus they handled the matter. They place ouer the arche of the church a yong nouice: he about midnight when they came to mumble their praiers (as they were wont to do) maketh a great rumbling & noise: out of hand the Monks began to coniure & charme, but he answereth nothing, then being required to giue a signe whether he were a dumbe Spirit or no, he begins to rumble and stir again: which thing they toke as a certaine signe. Hauing laid this foundation, they go vnto certain citizens, chief men and such as fauored them, declaring that a heauy chaunce had hapned at home, in their monasterie, not shewing what the matter was, but desiring thē to come to their mattens at midnight. Whē those citizens were come and that praiers were now begun, the counterfeit spirit beginneth to make a maruellous noise in the top of ỹ church, and being asked what he meant, and who he was, he giueth them signes that it is not lawful for him to speak: Therfore they commaunde him to make aunswere by tokens and signes, to certaine things they woulde demaunde of him. Nowe was there a hole made in the vaute, through the which he might heare and vnderstand the voyce of the coniurer: and then had he in his hande a little boord which at euery question he strake in such sort as he might easily be heard beneath. First therefore they aske him whether he were one of them that had bin buried in the same place, afterwards they reckning vp many by name which had bin buried there, at the last also name the Maiors wife: and there by and by, the Spirit gaue the signe that he was her soule. He was further asked whether he were damned or no, and if he were, for what desert or fault? Whether for couetousnesse, or wanton lust, for pride, or want of charitie, or whether it were for heresie, and for the secte of Luther newly sprung vp? Also what he meant by that noyse and sturre he kept there? Whether it were to haue the

bodie

bodie now buried in holy ground to be digged vp again, and to be laide in some other place? To all the which points, he answered by signes as he was commanded, by the which he affirmed, or denied any thing, according as he strake the bord twise or thrise togither. And when he had thus giuen them to vnderstand, that the very cause of his damnation was Luthers heresie, and that the bodie must nedes be digged vp againe, the Monkes request the citizens (whose presence they had vsed) that they would beare witnesse of those things which they had seene with their eyes, and that they would subscribe to such things, as were done a fewe dayes before. The citizens taking good aduise on the matter, least they should offend the Maior, or bring themselues in trouble, refuse so to do: but the Monkes notwithstanding take from thence the sweete bread, which they call the host, and body of our Lord, togither with all ỹ reliques of saints, and cary them to an other place, & there say their Masse. The bishops substitute iudge (whom they call Officiall) vnderstanding this matter, commeth thither accompanied with certain honest men, to ỹ intẽt he might know ỹ whole circumstances more exactly, & therfore he cõmandeth them to make cõiuration in his presence, & also he requireth certaine to be chosen to go vp to ỹ top of the vault, and ther to see whether any ghost appeared or not. That Stephanus Atrebatẽsis stifly denied, and maruellously persuading ỹ cõtrary, affirmed, that the spirit in no wise ought to be troubled. And albeit the Officiall, urged thẽ very much, ỹ there might be some coniuring of the spirit, yet could he nothing preuail. In the mean while that these things wer a doing, the Maior, whẽ he had shewed the other iustices of the citie, what he wold haue thẽ do, toke his iorny to the king, and opened the whole matter vnto him. And because the Monks refused iudgement vpon plea of their owne lawes and liberties: the king chosing out certaine of the Aldermen of *Paris*, giueth them absolute and full authoritie, to make enquirie on the matter.

The

The like doth the chancelor, maister Anthonius Pratensis, Cardinall and Legate for the Pope, throughout *Fraunce*. Therefore when they had no exception to alleadge, they were conueyed vnto *Paris* and there constreyned to make their aunswere: but yet could nothing be wrong out of them by confession. Whereupon they were put a part into diuers prisons, the Nouice baring kept in the house of maister *Fumæus*, one of the Aldermen, who being oftentimes examined & earnestly requested to vtter the truthe, woulde notwithstanding confesse nothing, because he feared that the Monks would afterwards put him to death, for stayning their order, and putting it to open shame: but whē the Iudges had made him sure promise, that he should escape punishment, and that he should neuer come into theire handling, he repped vp vnto them the whole matter, as it was done, and being brought before his fellowes, auoucheth the same to their faces. The Monkes albeit they were by these meanes conuicted, and almost taken tardy with the dēde doing, yet did they refuse the Iudges, bragging and vaunting them selues on their priuiledges: but al in vaine: for sentence passed on them, and they were condemned: that they being caried backe againe to *Orleaunce*, and there cast in prison, should finally be broughte forth to the chiefe Church of the citie openly, and from thence to the place of execution, where they should make open cōfession of their trespasses. But there chaunced at the very same time a grœuous persecution against the Lutherans, which was the cause why that sentence, (albeit was too gentle for so great an offence) was neuer put in executiō. For they feared much, because Luthers name was odious euery where, least if any sharpe iudgement hadde passed, they should not so muche haue punished the offenders, as shamed their order: and many supposed that whatsoeuer had hapned vnto them, would haue bin a pleasant and ioyful pageaunt and spectacle for the Lutherans. Now the or-

der

der of the Franciſcane Friers, hath the opinion of great holineſſe with the common people: inſomuch, that when they being condemned, were carried to *Orleaunce*, certaine fonde women moued with foliſh pittie, followed them to the very gates of the citie, weeping & ſighing abundantly. When they were come to *Orleaunce*, and were there caſt into diuers priſons, againe they vaunted and bare themſelues very brag on their priuiledges, and liberties: and ſo at the laſt when they had lyen long in priſon, they were in the end deliuered without any greater puniſhment. All the while they were in priſon, they wanted nothing: for there was beſtowed vpon them, eſpecially by women, very largely, for to ſerue for their liuing, and to purchaſe to them help and fauour. Except theſe perſecutions and troubles, which we ſpake of before, had hindred the matter, the king (as many reported) was fully determined, to haue ouerthrowne their houſe, and made it euen with the ground.

This Hiſtorie alſo doth demonſtrate and ſhewe, that Spirits are not alwayes heard, when ſome men affirme they are.

CHAP. IX.

Of a certaine pariſh Prieſt at *Clauenna*, whiche fayned himſelfe to bee our Ladie, and of an other that counterfeited himſelfe to be a ſoule: as alſo of a certaine diſguiſed Ieſuite Frier.

TO the ende wee may the better vnderſtande this matter, I will yet rehearſe an other Hiſtorie of a certaine pariſhe Prieſte, which chaunced a yeare before the other I ſpake of, which is ſette forth briefely, but yet truely, by Ioannes Stumpfius, in the Germane Chronicles of the Heluetians, in the twentieth Booke and eighth Chapter, whereof alſo many notable men at this day beare ſufficient witneſſe. Ioannes Stumpfius.

nesse. A certaine parish Priest of *Clauenna*, (whiche is a Citie neare the Laake or water Larius, in the Countrey of *Rhetia*, being farre in loue with an honest and faire mayden, the daughter of a citizen in the same towne, oftentimes followed her, as she went vnto her fathers barne: and attempted to haue deflowred her, but she euer resisted, and put him backe. In the ende when he saw he could not obtaine his purpose, he priuily stole out of the church a blew cloth, beset with sundry starres, and therwith couering himselfe, saue only that he left his armes & feete naked, which he also berayed with blood, he hideth himselfe without the towne, and there muffling his face with a thinne linnen cloath, meeteth again with the mayd, fayning himself with a counterfeit voyce, to be the blessed virgin Mary. Then in many words he declareth vnto her diuers plages, which were shortly like to fall on the Citie, for the heresies of Luther, (for at other times also hee had bitterly enueyed against Luther, in his open Sermons:) he also commaunded the mayd to shew many things vnto the citizens, touching holy dayes, fastings, generall processions, &c. And amongst other things he added, that there was a certain holy and religious man, whiche had heeretofore asked a thing at her hands in the very same place, which she had hitherto denied him, but now it was her pleasure, if he required ý same again, she should in any wise grant it, if she would attain euerlasting life: and ý aboue all thing, she must conceale and kéep close this latter point vnto her self. The mayde by & by blazed it about al the citie, that our Lady had visibly appeared vnto her, & foretold her of sundry plagues likely to happen vnto the citie. The inhabitants taking good aduise on this matter, at the last for feare of these imminent dangers and plages, gaue commandement, that three daies should be kept holy. In the which time, the mayd, supposing she should do high seruice to the virgin Mary, fulfilleth the lust of that lucked knaue. This treacherie and deceit being shortly af-

ter

ter detected by the wonderfull prouidence of God, the varlet was first beheaded, and afterward burnt in fire.

Erasmus Roterodamus, writeth in his two and twentieth booke of Epistles, vnto a certaine Bishop, excusing himself, touching certaine points, which he had moued vnto him, to the ende he should be very circumspect: and amongst other things, making mention there of spirits or wandring soules, he reporteth this Historie. There was (saith he) a certaine parish Priest, who had dwelling with him in his house, a Neece of his, a woman well stored with money: In whose Chamber hee would oftentimes conuey himselfe, being disguised in a sheete lyke vnto a Spirite: And then he cast forth a doubtfull voyce, hoping that the woman would either procure a coniurer for her helpe, or else her selfe make him answere. But she hauing a manlike courage, priuily requesteth one of her friendes to lodge in her Chamber secretly all night. The man being armed with a clubbe instead of other coniuring toles, and being well tipped with drinke, to auoyd feare, hideth himselfe in the bedde. Sodainly commeth the Spirit roaring very miserably: The coniurer with his clubbe awaketh, leapeth out of his bedde scant sober, and setteth vpon him. Then the Spirit with his voyce and iesture, beginneth to make him afrayd. But the drunken coniurer sone answered him: If (quoth he) thou be the Diuel, I am thy mother: and therewith catching holde on him, all to beat him with his club, and would also haue slaine him, if he had not chaunged his voyce, and cryed; O spare me for Gods sake, I am no soule, but I am sir John. Which voyce when the woman heard and knewe, she leapes out of her bedde, and parts the fraye, &c. The same Erasmus writeth in the forsayd Epistle, that this Priest vpon Easter eue, put liue crabbes priuily into the churchyard, hauing ware candles on light cleauing to their sides: which when they crabbed amongst the graues, seemed to bee suche a terrible sight, Erasmus. Spectrum.

that no man durſt approach nére them. Hereof roſe a fearfull reporte, wherewith all men béeing amazed, the prieſt declareth to ỳ people in the pulpit, that they were ỳ ſoules of deade men which deſired to be deliuered out of their torments by Maſſes & almes déeds. This deceite was eſpied by theſe meanes: that at the laſt one or two of the crabbes were found amongſt the rubbiſh, hauing the candles done out cleauing on their backs, which ỳ prieſt had not take vp.

Georglus Buchananus.

Georgius Buchananus, prince of all Poets in this our age, reporteth an hiſtorie in his Commodie called Franciſcanus, of one Langus a prieſt, who falſly affirming that in a field of Scotland full of Brimſtone there were ſoules miſerablie tormented, which continually cried for helpe and ſuccour, ſuborned a countrie clowne whome he would coniure, as if he had bin one of thoſe ſoules. Which deceite of his, ỳ husbandmã afterward diſcouered whẽ he was drunk. I would here repeate his verſes, but that his bookes are nowe in euery mans hands. While I was writing theſe things, it was reported vnto me by credible perſons, that in Auguſta, a noble citie of Germanie, this preſent yeare 1569. there was a maide and certaine other men ſeruants in a gre[illegible]mans family, which little regarded the ſect of the Ieſuite friers: & that one of the ſaide order made promiſe to their maſter, that he wold eaſily bring them to an other opinion: & ſo diſguiſing himſelfe like vnto a Diuel, was hid in a priuie corner of ỳ houſe: vnto the which place, one of the maides going, either of hir owne accorde to fetche ſome thing, or being ſent by her maſter, was by ỳ diſguiſed Ieſuite made maruellouſly afraide: which thing ſhe preſently declared vnto one of the mẽ ſeruants exhorting him in any wiſe to take héede of the place. Whoſoftly after going to the ſame place, & laying hold on his dagger, ſodeynly ſtabbed in the counterfeit diuell, as he came ruſhing on him. This hiſtory is written in Duch verſes, and put in print, and now almoſt in euery mans hands.

That

CHAP. X.

That it is no maruell if vaine fightes haue bene in old time, neither yet that it is to be maruelled at, if there be any at this day.

MAny other like examples might be brought, but these may suffise to proue euidently, to what point ambition, couetousnesse, enuy, hatred, stubbornesse, idlenesse and loue, do most commonly driue men.

We see by common experience, that proude ambitious men dare aduenture any thing. If they may hurt or hinder other men by accusations, slanders, or any other wayes or meanes, whome they suppose may preiudice or let their exalting to honour, they sticke not at all to do it. What maruell is it then that Monkes and Priests, which desire to be aloft, indeuour now a daies to purchase vnto themselues authoritie by false miracles, vaine apparitions, and such other like trumpery. Ambition.

All men know what a pernitious thing couetousnesse is. For they which are not contented to liue with a little, but will néeds be rich, neither care for any man, nor yet spare any man. Hungry guttes séeke sundrie wayes to fill themselues: fewe willingly endure hunger. Wherefore it is not to be maruelled at, if amongst Monks and Priests at these our dayes, who haue bene euer reported to be couetous, there be some founde, which by false apparitions of soules, séeke their gaines, inuenting holy pilgrimages, and other baytes to get mony. For what wil not idle and slothfull lubbers attempt to purchase riches? Doth not Saint Paule say, that those which will ware rich by idlenesse, fall into the snares of the Diuell? Couetousnesse. Paule.

Emulation, wilfulnesse, enuie, hatred, contention, desire to ouercome, what they may do, what they may bring to passe, daily experience teacheth vs. The Preachers of Enuie.

Berna, when they perceiued they could not ouercome their aduersaries by any other meanes, yelded themselues (which is horrible to be spoken) vnto the diuel, making him one of their counsell. And who can deny but ỹ priests now adayes are also for the most part, stubborne, and full of contention.

Idlenesse. Idlenesse is the nurse and mother of all mischiefe: what goodnesse then may ye looke for of them, which not only exercise themselues in no labours prescribed by God, neither yet apply themselues to good learning, but day and night play the gluttons? Tell me I pray thee, whether the laboring husbandman, or the idle man, who alwayes spent his time in inuenting pernitious mischiefes, first founde out those cruel instruments of warre which they call gunnes?

Loue. It might be declared in many words what loue is able to do. Now because Monks and Priests liue idely, abounding in all wantonnesse, and yet are restrained from holy marriage, what maruell is it if at this time also they faine and counterfeit many visions, that they might thereby the easier enioy their loue? And here I wil not say it is to be feared, that there are many amongst them so wicked and villanous, as to exercise & practise magicall Artes, and such like, which are vtterly forbidden. Who can then marrell hereafter, if it be sayd, they counterfeyt spirites, affirming they haue let men see this or that soule? For in what men soeuer these vices be, which we haue rehearsed, surely those dare boldly aduenture any thing.

No kinde of men are more obnorious to these kinde of things, than those which leade their life in Monasteries, and Colledges: and therefore no man ought to marueil or thinke it a straunge thing, if we say that in times past many false visions haue bene practised, and may also at this day likewise happen. For ỹ world, as all men iustly complaine, waxeth worse and worse. Men are now more impudent, more bold, more couetous, and more wicked, than euer they were in times past.

Moreouer,

Moreouer, the Cleargie of *Rome* haue in many places this prerogatiue aboue others, that most men (especially such as are led by superstition) make much of them, worshipping them with great reuerence, no man so much as suspecteth them to apply their mindes to euill matters, to subtiltie, craft, and deceit: all men looke for other things at their hands. If therefore they addict themselues to euill deuises, they may easily deceiue men, except God miraculously reueale their wickednesse, and bring it to light, as we declared in a fewe examples rehearsed before.

And perchance for this cause also, Priests and Monkes could not bee so well blamed, for their so often deceiuing plaine meaning folkes with craft and subtiltie, in so much as some of their moste holy Fathers, I meane Popes of *Rome*, haue bin very cunning in magicall sciences, as their owne Historiographers affirme, and by meanes of those artes, haue aspired to the high top of Popedome. Benno (or rather Bruno, for so I iudge his name is) who was also a Cardinall, set forth the life of Pope Gregorie the seuenth, in writing, in the which hee sheweth the sayd Bishop to haue bene a proude, arrogant, malicious and couetous Monke, and that hee was throughly seene in the blacke art of Negromancie. Bartholomeus Platina (who being a sworne seruant with the Pope, excusing their faults as much as he can) writeth of Siluester the second, that he gaue himselfe to the diuel, and that by his meanes, his counsell & magical deuises, he attained that great office of papacie. Do ye think, that it is a hard thing for him that is confederat with the enemy of mankind, to faine spirits & soules, or to cõiure a diuel, to make men beleeue he were a soule, do you thinke such men abhorre to do such mischiefe? The Historiographers report that Bonifacius the 8 deceiued his predecessor Celestinus, by a voyce sent through a cane reed, as though it had come from heauen, perswading him to giue ouer his office of Popeship, and to institute therein, one Bonifacius a wor-

Popes haue fained visions.

Bruno.

Gregorius 7.

Bartholomeus Platina.

Bonifacius.

a worthier man than he, except he would be thrust out of the kingdome of heauen. The poore simple Pope obeying this voyce, ordeined Bonifacius Pope in his steade, in the yeare of our Lord 1294. who first brought in the yeare of Jubile. Of this Boniface, the common people would say, *He came in like a Fox, he raigned like a wolfe, and died like a Dog.* If the very vicar of Christ, who hath all knowledge as it were fast lockt in the Coffer of his breast, could be deceiued, lette no man maruel any more simple credulous husbandmen and citezens haue ben deceiued, and that it hath bin said to them: God spake this: This soule did aske helpe: and such like things, which are most false and vaine. If this man coulde counterfeit the voyce of God, coulde he not also faine the voice of dead men?

Sometimes Laye men beguile the Priests.

Before I proceede any further, this is also to be obserued, that pleasaunt conceited fellowes, may oftentimes deceiue the priests, themselues. For when the priests did brag, that they coulde coniure Spirits and deliuer mens soules, it may be that other being wrapped in sheets, hauing vnderneth them line coales in an earthen pot, appeared vnto priests, who by and by were persuaded they saiue saules which required their helpe to be deliuered. Erasmus in his Colloquio or talke which he intituled Exorcismus, vel spectrum, or a coniuration or vision, writeth howe one Polus maruellously deceiued a priest called Faustus. But there is no doubt but that priests being many times deceiued in iest by the lay men for pastimes sake, haue on the other side more often times beguiled them in earnest.

Men walking by night.

I haue spoken hitherto of men being awake, and now I will adde a fewe words of such as sleepe. There be many which haue such a kinde of disease, that they walke in their sleepe: which thing we reade to haue bin true in one Theon a Stoicke, and in Pericles seruant, who in their sleepe climed vp to the top of the house. I haue hearde of some which in their sleepe haue done that which being a-

wake

wake, they could not do by any meanes. If a man ſée ſuch a one walking in the night, either apparrelled or naked, and after here him ſay he was at the ſame time in his bed, he will ſtraight thinke, it was his ſoule that he ſawe, the like will he do if he heare ſuch a one at his owne houſe.

CHAP. XI.

That many naturall things are taken to be ghoaſts.

THere happen daily many things by the ordinary courſe of nature, which diuers men, eſpecially they that are timorous and fearefull, ſuppoſe to be viſions or ſpirits. As for example, when they heare the crying of ratts, catts, weaſels, martins, or any other beaſte, or when they heare a horſe beate his féete on the plankes in the ſtable at midnight, by and by they ſweat for feare, ſuppoſing ſome bugges to walke in the dead of the night. Sometimes a bittour, or hearne (which birds are ſildome ſéene with vs in *Germany*) or ſome other ſtraunge birds, make a noiſe in the aire: many fooles ſtraightwayes dreame, they haue heard I wotte not what. If a worme which fretteth wood, or that breedeth in trées, chaunce to gnawe a wall of wayneſcot, or other timber, many will iudge they heare one ſoftly knocking vppon an anduill with a ſledge: and ſometimes they imagine they heare many hammers at one time. Simple fooliſh men hearing theſe things, imagine, I know not how, that there be certaine elues or fairies of the earth, and tell many ſtraunge and maruellous tales of them, which they haue heard of their grandmothers and mothers, how they haue appeared vnto thoſe of the houſe, haue done ſeruice, haue rocked the cradle, and (which is a ſigne of good lucke) do continually tarry in the houſe. If ſuch dwarfes or elues haue beene ſéene at any time, ſurely they were euill ſpirits. For we reade Fayries of the earth.

that the Gentiles in time past, had their familiar or houshold gods, whome they worshipped with great deuotion, because (as they thought) they toke care of their house, and defended their family: and vnto these men, euil spirits did sometimes appeare, thereby to confirme them the more in their blinde superstition.

Olaus Magnus. Olaus Magnus Archbishop of *Vpsalia*, writeth in his history de Gentibus Septentrionalibus, that euen at this day also, there are spirits seene in these countries, which hauing the shape of men, do men seruice in the night, dressing their horse, and loking to their cattell. The winde in the night, ouerthroweth some thing, or shaketh a casement or lid of the window: many by and by thinke they see a spirite, and can very hardly be brought from that vaine opinion.

Echo. This thing is also according to nature, that when a man either crieth or speaketh in the woods, dales, or other hollow places, Eccho wil resound the later word or syllable, so plainly many times, that a man would verily thinke some liuing bodie made him answere againe. Many would be afraide hereof at all times, but especially in the night season, except he knew very well it were a naturall thing.

Cardanus. Cardanus in his booke de Subtilitate lib. 18. rehearseth a maruellous historie of one Comensis, who very late in the night, comming to a riuers side, not knowing where he might passe ouer, called out aloude for some bodie to shewe him the forde, and when the Echo made him answere, hee supposing it to be a man, asked him if he might passe ouer here: to whom the Echo answered again in ỳ Italian tong, Here, here. But in ỳ place was a whirlpoole, and a great roring of the water: Therfore ỳ man douting, asketh once or twice againe, whether the riuer might be past ouer in the same place: to which the Echo answered stil that it might. In the end, when he had escaped ỳ passage without danger, he told his friends, how by the persuasiõ of the diuel, he had almost throwne himself headlong into the riuer, and drow-

ned

ned himself. In the same place, he saith, that the great Hall at Ticinium in *Italy*, doth render sundry and manifold voyces, if one speake in it, and that the voyces as it were die and make an end much lyke a mans voyce, when he lyeth a dying, in so much that a man can scant be perswaded it is the noyse of Echo.

There are certain things which shine only in the night, as some precious stones do, the eyes of certaine beastes, a Glowworme, or Globard, as also some kinde of rotten wood, wherewith many times children so terrifie their play-fellowes, that they imagine with themselues, to see euil spirites, or men all burning with fire. Hector Boethius writeth, that a certain King of Scots caused some of his men to be disguised in garments with bright shining scales, hauing in their hands rotten wood instead of staues, and so to appeare to his nobilitie and Lords in the night, exhorting them to fight couragiously with their enemies, and promising them to obtaine victorie. Whereby the noble men supposing they had seene angels, behaued themselues valiantly, and atchieued the victorie. Things shyning by night. Hector Boethius.

Many times candles & small fires appeare in the night, and seeme to runne vp and downe. And as the yong men in *Heluetia*, who with their firebrands which they light, at the bonfires in Shroftide, sometime gather themselues together, and then scatter abroad, and againe, meeting togither, march in a long rancke: euen so do those fires sometime seeme to come togither, and by and by to be seuered & runne abroad, and at the last to vanish cleane away. Sometime these fires goe alone in the night season, and put such as see them, as they trauell by night, in great feare. But these things, and many such lyke haue their naturall causes: and yet I will not deny, but that many times Diuels delude men in this maner. Burning lights

Natural Philosophers write, that thicke exhilations aryse out of the earth, and are kindled. Myres full Exhalations.

of sulphur and brimstone, if the aire enter vnto it, as it lyeth in the holes and veines of the earth, will kindle on fier, and striue to get out. Sometimes fire burſteth out of the earth, as high as a tall trée, and is ſuddeinly put out againe. Which thing is to be thought to proceede of fierie matter, ſéeking a vent to guſh out. Wee reade of the mount *Aetna* in *Cicilie*, that in times paſt it burnt continually, day and night, caſting forth flames of fire, fiery ſtones and aſhes in great aboundance. The lyke is read alſo at *Veſuuius* a hill in *Campaine*, about a Germaine mile from *Naples*. The ſame hill in the time of Titus the Emperour, as S. Hierom reporteth, caſt forth of it ſo much fire, that it burnt the country, and cities, and people rounde about it, and filled the fieldes adioyning full of cinders and aſhes. Theſe two hilles, euen in our dayes boyling with great heate, haue very much indamaged the people inhabiting thereabout. In *Iſeland*, as Olaus Magnus witneſſeth, are found fiers which breake out of the earth. And as whole hilles and mountaines may burne, euen ſo may a litle fire be kindled in the earth, and yet wander very large. They which trauelling by the way, or by ſome other meanes chaunce to ſée theſe things, and know not the naturall cauſes of them, imagin by reaſon of feare, that they haue ſéene men burning like fire, or ſome other ſtraunge thing, which they haue heard other men talke of. And by meanes of their great feare, oftentimes they fall into great daungerous diſeaſes.

Glaſſes. The arte perſpectiue doth alſo worke this wonderfull feate, that diuers and ſundrie ſhapes will appeare in glaſſes, made and ſette togither after a certeine artificial forte: ſometimes they will ſéeme to goe out of the dores, and reſemble men of our familiar acquaintance. Many things in very déed are naturall, although we cannot finde any naturall reaſon for them.

And yet by the way, they ſhewe themſelues too fooliſhe, which

which labour to bring all things to natural causes. Here I will say nothing of those men, which can beare plaine and rude people in hande, that they, or some other of their acquaintance, haue sene strange things, which they earnestly auouch to be true, when as indede there was no suche thing. How often I pray you, do we heare things affirmed as true, which afterward proue most false: as that one was caried away bodie and soule, that an other was put to death, and an infinit nomber of such like reports.

CHAP. XII.

A proofe out of the Gentiles histories, that Spirites and Ghoasts do oftentimes appeare.

ALbeit many melancholicke, madde, fearefull, and weake sensed men, do oftentimes imagine many things which in very dede are not, and are likewise deceiued, sometime by men, or by brute beasts: and moreouer mistake things which procede of naturall causes, to be bugges and spirites, as I haue hitherto declared by many examples, yet it is most certaine and sure, that all those things which appeare vnto men are not alwayes naturall things, nor alwayes vaine terrors to affray men: but that spirites do often appeare, and many straunge and maruellous things do sundry times chance. For many such things of this sort, are to be red in diuers graue and auncient Historiographers: and many men of no small credite, haue affirmed, that they haue sene spirites both in the day and in the night also. And here I will orderly declare a fewe histories out of diuers allowed authors, touching spirites which haue appeared and shewed themselues.

Triton appeared to Iulius Cæsar.

Suetonius Tranquillus writeth, that when Iulius Cæsar marching out of *Fraunce* into *Italie* with his army, and comming to the riuer *Rubico*, which diuideth *Italie* from

the hether *Fraunce*, staying there a while, and reuolting with himselfe howe great an enterprise hee had taken in hand, as he was wauering in mind whether he shuld passe the water or not, suddeinly there appeared a man of excelling stature and shape sitting hard by, pyping on a rēde. (Melancthon in his Phisickes calleth him Triton) vnto whom when not only shepheards, but also very many souldiers from the campe, and amongst them diuers trumpetters had flocked to heare him, he sodeinly snatched a trumpet from one of them, and leaped to the riuer, and with a lustie breath blowing vp the alarum, went to the farther side. Then sayd Cæsar, good lucke mates, let vs goe whither the gods warnings leade vs, and whither our enemies iniquitie calleth vs: The dice are throwne. And so he transported ouer.

Theseus seene in the battaile of Maratho.

Plutarke writeth in Theseus life, that many which were in the battaile of Marathonia, against the Medians, did affirme, that they sawe the soule of Theseus armed, (who long time before died of a fall) before the vauntgard of the Grecians, running and setting on the barbarous Medians. For which cause the Athenians afterward were moued to honor him as a demigod.

Pausanias writeth in Atticis, That in the field of Maratho. 400. yeares after the battaile there foughten, there was heard the neying of Horses, and the encountring of souldiers, as it were fighting euery night: And that they which of purpose came to heare these things, could heare nothing, but those that by chaunce came that way, heard it very sensibly.

The same Plutarke writeth in the life of Cimon, that when the citizens of Cherouesus, had by faire words called home their captaine Damon, (who before for diuers murthers departed the citie) afterwards they cruelly slew him in a Hotehouse, as he was bathing himselfe, and from that time forth, there were many strange sightes seene in

the

the same place, & many times also most grieuous gronings were there heard, insomuch that they were euer after constreined to stop vp the hotehouse doores.

Also in ỹ life of Dion, he reporteth that the saide Dion being a stoute & couragious man without any feare, sawe notwithstanding a great and maruellous horrible sight. For when he chaunced to sit alone in the entry of his house in the euening (those are Plutarks owne words, as Xilander interpreteth them) musing & discoursing many things with himselfe, being sodeinly moued with a great noyse, he arose and looked backe to the other side of the gallerie, and there he espied a monstrous great woman, who in apparell and countenaunce nothing differing from a Tragi, call furie, swept the house with a broome. With the which sight being amazed & terribly afraide, he called his friends and acquaintance vnto him, and declaring vnto them what he had seene, desired thē to remaine with him al that night: for being as it were stricken dead with feare, he doubted least it would appeare vnto him againe, if he were alone, which indeede neuer happned after. But a fewe daies after, his sonne threwe himselfe headlong from the top of the house, and died, and he himselfe being stabbed through the bodie, ended his miserable life.

The same author writeth in the life of Decius Brutus, how when Brutus was determined to transporte his army out of Asia into Europe, being in his tent about midnight, the candle burning dimly, and all the host quiet and silent, as he was musing and reuoluing with himselfe, he seemed that he heard one entring the Tente into him, and looking backe vnto the doore, he sawe a terrible and monstrous shape of a bodie, which farre exceeded the common stature of men, standing faste by him without any words, wherewith he was sore afraid: and yet he ventured to aske it this question. What art thou (saieth he) either a God, or a man? and why commest thou

vnto

vnto me? Whereto the image answered: I am (quoth he) O Brutus, thy euill ghoast, at Philippos thou shalt sée mée. Then saith Brutus, being nothing amazed: I will sée thée. When the sight was vanished, he called his seruants, who tolde him, that they neither sawe any such thing, neither heard any voyce at all. All that night Brutus could not sléep one winke. In the morning very early he goeth vnto Cassius and sheweth him his straunge vision. Cassius who despised all such things (for he was an Epicure) ascribed the whole matter to naturall causes. For his disputation hereof, is yet extant in Plutarke. Afterward Brutus (being vanquished by Augustus, and Anthony, in the field of Philippi) slew himselfe because he would not bee deliuered into the hands of his enemies.

Caius Cassius sawe Iulius Cæsar.

Valerius Maximus, in his first booke and first chap. writeth, that Caius Cassius sawe Iulius Cæsar in the battaile of Philippi, (in a shape of greater maiesty, than any man hath) setting spurres to his horse, and running on him with a terrible threatning countenance: which when Cassius sawe, he turned his backe to the enemy, and fled, and shortly after murthered himselfe.

Drusus sawe a woman excelling all mortall creatures in maiestie.

Dio Cassius Nicæus, in his Roman historie from the beginning of his 55. booke writeth of Drusus, who by spoyling *Germany* far and nére on euery side, came euen to the riuer Albis, where when he could not get ouer, erecting monuments of victorie, departed back againe: For he there saw a woman, exceeding the state of mortall creatures, which met him, and sayd vnto him: Drusus, which canst finde no end of thy greedie desire, whither goest thou? It is not lawfull for thée to sée al these things: but rather get thée hence, for the ende both of thy life and worthie déedes is nowe at hand. When Drusus heard these things, he sodeinly chaunged his course, and being on his iourney, before he came to the riuer of Rein, he sickned and died. Other like foretokens the same author reporteth to haue happned before his death,

death, all the which notwithstanding, he nothing regarded. For two yong men appeared on horsebacke vpon the rampiers, and the shriking of women was also hearde, with many other such like. &c.

Plinius secundus citizen of Nouocomensis, hath an Epistle of Spirits appearings, written vnto his friend Sura in the vii. booke of his Epistles, which we haue thought good to set downe whole in this place: Leisure (saith he) graunteth me libertie to learne, and giueth thée leaue to teache. Therfore I am very desirous to knowe whether thou thinke fantasies are any thing, and whether they haue any proper figure of their owne, and be some kinde of diuine power, or else whether they take vppon them some vaine & variable shape, according to the feare which we haue of them? That I should so beléeue, I am especially moued thereto by that which I heare saie happened to Curtius Rufus, who was as then, companion to the Proconsul of *Affrica*, bothe poore, and also of small reputation. And as he walked one day in a Gallerie towardes the euening their méeteth with him the shape of a woman, more great & beautifull, than any liuing creature. Wherat he béeing amazed, she telleth him that she is *Affrica*, and is come vnto him to foretell him of good happe to followe: First that he should go to Rome, and there take on him the state of great honoure, and afterwarde, that he should returne into the same prouince with full and high authoritie, and there end his daies. Which things came all to passe. And moreouer, the same figure (as it is saide) mette with him againe on the shore side, as he entred out of the ship, and came towardes *Carthage* to take his charge and regiment in hande. Afterwards falling sick, when no man dispayred of his healthe, coniecturing things to come by those that had passed, and comparing aduersitie with his former prospertie, he vtterly cast away all hope of recouerie. Is not this also more terrible, and no lesse mar-

Plinius secundus writing of spirits.

uellous, whiche I will now repeate as I haue heard it tolde?

The spirit of Athen.

There was in *Athens* a goodly and a very large house, but euill reported, and counted as an infortunate and vnluckie house. For about midnight, there was heard the noyse of iron, and if one marked it well, the ratling of chaines, as it were a farre off at the first, and so, nérer and nérer: shortly there appeared an image or shape, as it were an olde man, leane and loathsome to beholde, with a long beard and staring haire: on his legges he had fetters, and in his hands carried chaines which he alwaies ratled together. By meanes whereof, those that inhabited the house, by reason of their feare, watched many heauie and pittifull nights: after their watching followed sickenesse, and soone after, as feare increased, ensued death. For in the day time also, albeit the image were departed, yet the remembrance thereof, was euer present before their eyes: so that their feare was longer than they had cause to feare. Upon this the house stood desert and solitarie, wholly lefte vnto the monster whiche haunted it: yet was it proclaimed to be solde, if happily any man whiche was ignorant of this great mischiefe, would either buy it or hire it. Athenodorus chanced to come to *Athens*, and there readeth the writing on the dore: And when he had learned the price, because he suspected the good cheapenesse thereof, enquiring further, vnderstoode the whole matter, and notwithstanding any thing that he heard, he hired the house, so much the rather. When it waxed night, he commaundeth his seruauntes to make his bedde in the vtter part of the house: he taketh his writing tables, his writing wier and a candle, and sendeth all his seruaunts into the inner part of the house. He himselfe setteth his minde, his eyes and hand to write, least his mind being vnoccupied, should imagine it heard straunge figures, and should bréed vaine feare. In the beginning of the night, there was silence as

is

is in all other places, but not long after the iron began to ring, and the chaines to moue: but yet he would not looke vp, nor let ceale his writing, but hardned his hart, and stopped his eares. Then the noyse increaseth & draweth neare, and seemeth sometimes to be without the porch, sometimes within. Thē he looketh back, and seeth and acknowledgeth the shape whereof he had heard before: the image stood still and beckned with his finger as though he had called him, the philosopher on the other side signifieth with his hand, that he should stay a while, and falleth againe to his writing. The image shaketh his chaines ouer his head, as he sate writing. He looketh about againe, and seeth him beckning, as he did before. And so rising vp without delay, taketh the candle in his hand and followeth: the image goeth before with a softly pace, as though he were heauily laden with chaines: After he had turned aside into the court of the house, sodeinly vanishing away, leaueth his walking mate alone. He being forsaken, taieth hearbes and leaues gathered togither vpon the place. The next day he goeth to the rulers of the citie, and willeth them to commaund the place to bee digged vp, whiche done, they finde bones wrapped and tyed in chaynes: which the bodie beeing putrified and consumed with long lying in the earth, had left lying in bondes: those bones being gathered togither, were buried solemnely: The house, after they were orderly laide in the ground, was euer after cleare of all such ghostes.

In these things I must beleeue other mens reports, but that which followeth, I can boldly affirme on mine owne knowledge.

I haue one with mée, sometime my bondseruaunt, but nowe enfraunchized and set at libertie, a man not vterly vnlearned: with him my yonger brother lay togither in one bed. He in his owne imagination séemed that he saw a certaine personage sitting vpon the bedde where he laie,

putting knives vnto his head, and therewith polling off his haires. When it was day light, the haires were found on the ground, he being in very deed notted about the crowne of his head. Shortly after the like happened vnto him, which made all men beleeue the first was true. The boy amongst a great many of his fellowes chaunced to sleepe in the schole, and being in sleepe, there came certaine in at the windowes (as he sayd) cloathed in white garments, and shore of his haire as he laie, and so departed againe as they came. This polling, and also his haires scattered abroad, were founde when it was day. No notable matter ensued hereof, except it were, perchaunce, that I was not accused of treason, as I should haue bene, if Domitianus, who died about this time, had liued longer. For there was a libell found in his coffers, giuen vnto him against me, written by maister Carus. By which it may well be coniectured, that in so much as those which are accused, do vse to let their haire growe very long, the cutting of my friends haire, was a sure signe of escaping the great daunger, which then hung ouer my head. Wherefore I hartily require you to straine your learning. The matter is worthie, wherein ye may vse long and deepe consideration: and I surely am vnworthie to whom ye shuld open your knowledge. You may therfore (if it please you) dispute the matter on both sides, as ye are accustomed, but yet I pray you handle it more throughly on the one side, least ye sende me away wauering and hanging in doubt, whereas the cause of my seeking counsel, is to the ende I might be quite out of doubt. Fare ye well.

What answere master Sura, (who as it appeareth, was well learned) made vnto maister Pliny I do not finde. But to say the truth, what sound answere could he, being a Gentile make herein: The like history is to be red in the collections of Iohn Manlius common places, who (as Philip Melancthon reporteth) doth write, that Theodorus Gaza

Manlius.

had

had a lordship or manour place in *Campania*, giuen him by Nicholas Pope of *Rome*. In the manour, when by chaunce, one of his farmers had digged vp a coffin with dead mens bones in it, there sodeinly appeared a spirit vnto him, commaunding him to bury the coffin againe, or else his sonne should shortly after die. Which when the farmer refused to do, shortly after his sonne was found slaine in the night. A fewe dayes after, the Spirit appeared againe vnto the husbandman, menacing and threatning him, that in case he did not bury the aforesaid bones, he would kill his other sonne also. The man taking warning by his losse, and seeing his other sonne fallen sicke, goeth vnto maister Theodorus and sheweth him all the matter. He vnderstanding it, goeth with him to the manour, and there in the same place where the farmer had before digged vp the coffin, casting a new graue, they bury the coffin with the bones. Assone as the bones were laide in the graue, the husbandmans sonne immediatly recouered his health.

Dion writeth, that the Emperour Traianus was ledde out of the house, where he had taken vp his Inne, in the time of an earthquake, into a more safer place.

Iulius Capitolinus, which setteth out a fewe lines of the Romane Emperours, reporteth, that Pertinax for the space of three dayes before he was slaine by a thrust, sawe a certaine shadow in one of his fishponds, which with a sworde readie drawne threatened to slaie him, and thereby much disquieted him.

Flauius Vopiscus writeth, that wheras Tacitus fathers graue opened it selfe, the sides therof falling downe of their owne accord, and that his mothers soule appeared both to him and Florianus day and night, as if she had bene liuing, it was a most sure and infallible signe, that he should die shortly after.

Ammianus Marcellinus, writing of the signes or prognostications of Constantius death, saith that he was troubled

and terrified in the night season with shapes and figures.

The same Author affirmeth in his 25. booke, that a little before Iulianus died, as he sate writing in the tents, following the example of Iulius Cæsar, he saw the image of the publicke Genius, or god of the place (which was wont to be painted with Amaltheas horne in his hand) departing from him, more deformed and ill fauoured, than when it began to mount vp to the narrow top of the tent.

Lucan. Lucanus as well an excellent Historiographer, as also a most learned Poet, reckneth vp many forewarnings, in his first booke of the battaile of Pharsalia, which chaunced before the great conflict betwéen Iulius Cæsar, and great Pompeius: and amongst other things, he writeth thus.

The trumpets blew, and looke euen as the battaile ioynd apace,
So did the night with silent shaades increase her darkish face.
And then the ghosts of Sylla *fierce, were plainly seene in field,*
Thereby declaring euil signes, of blood that should be spild.
And by the floud of Anien, the husband did spie
Great Marius, *out of broken graue his head aduauncing hie.*

CHAP. XIII.

A proofe out of the histories of the auncient Church, and of the writings of holie Fathers, that there are walking Spirits.

Sozomenus. IF we reade ouer the Ecclesiasticall histories, we shall finde many of these exemples. Sozomenus writeth in his Ecclesiasticall historie, the first booke and 28. chapter, of one Apelles, a black Smyth by occupation (whose name was at that time very famous throughout *Egipt*, for the gift of working miracles, wherwith he was indewed) who as he was one night hard at his worke, had appearing vnto him, a vision of a Diuel in the likenesse and attire of a very beautifull womã, mouing & intising him to the vice of lechery. But he sodenly catching ỹ iron which he wrought on, glowing hot

out

out of the fire, thrust it in ỹ diuels face, and scorched his visage, wherat he fretting & crying out, in al hast fled away.

Like wise in his 7. booke and 23. chap. writing of the sedition raised at *Antioche*, for the immoderat action and tribute which Theodosius layd on the citie in the time of warres, whereby the people being offended, ouerthrew the images of the Emperour and his wife, dragging them in roapes about the citie, and reporting all kinde of villany and dispite against them, thus he saith. But in the night before, assone as the rebellion began, immediatly at the breake of the day, it is certainly reported there was a straunge sight scene, of a woman hauing a huge stature and most horrible looke, running vp and downe the citie through the stretes aloft in the aire, whisking & beating the aire with a whip, rendring a fearefull sound. That as men are wont to prouoke wilde beasts to anger, which serue for publike spectacles: euen so it seemed, some euil angell by the craft of the diuell stirred vp that commotion amongst the people.

Theodorus Lector, in his first booke of Collectanies, out of the Ecclesiasticall history writeth, that as Gennadius Patriarch of *Constantinople*, came downe to the high aultar to make praiers and orizons, there appeared vnto him a certaine vision or spirit in a most horrible shape and figure, which so soone as he had sharply rebuked, straightwaies he heard a voice crying out aloud, ỹ so lõg as he liued he would giue place & cease, but when he was once dead, he would surely ransack and spoyle the Church. Which when ỹ good father heard, he ernestly praied for ỹ preseruation of the church, & soone after departed this life. There are many things to be read in Gregori⁹ Nicephor⁹, who setteth forth Ecclesiastical matters at large, & Abdias in the liues of the Apostles, concerning visions, dreames, miracles of saints, and also appearings of spirites. For wise men iudge, they were more diligent & ready in describing such things, than in other matters, which might haue bin to greater purpose

Theodorus.

Nicephorus.

and

and much more profitable for the readers to vnderstand.

He that readeth ouer the Histories, which in times past haue bene written, (and that especially by Monkes) shall méete with an innumerable company of these sorts: Yet by the way I must néedes say this, that verie many things haue bin written by them, which the Readers may iustly suspect, and stand in great doubt of.

Ludouicus Viues, Beatus Rhenanus, and many other learned men of our time, in describing other things, do finde great fault with the Chronicles written by Monkes, for that they were gathered togither by vnlearned dolts without any iudgement. But let euery man estéeme of them as he list. For albeit there are diuers things in them very foolish and ridiculous, yet it may be well thought that many things were so in very déed, as they haue committed them to writing.

A man shall méete with many places concerning visions and appearings of spirits, euen in the old fathers also.

Ambrose. S. Ambrose in his 90. Sermon, writeth of a noble Virgin named Agnes, who was crowned with martirdome for the professiõ of christian religion. And as her parents watched one night by her graue, they saw about midnight, a goodly company of Virgins cloathed in golden vayles, amongst whome also was their daughter, arraied like vnto the rest: who willing the other Virgins to staie awhile, turning her selfe towards her parents, willed them in any case, not to bewaile her as if she were dead, but rather to reioyce with her, for that she had obteined of God eternal life. Which assoon as she had spoken, she immediatly vanisht out of sight.

Augustine. S. Augustin declareth in his booke, De cura pro mortuis agenda, that when the Citie of *Nola* was besieged by the Barbariens, the citizens saw Felix the martyr plainly appearing vnto them.

Felix appeared at Nola.

Touching S. Gregorie, who in his Dialogues writeth many such things, we will entreate hereafter when his turne commeth.

Gregorie.

Ye shall read of many such like, in the liues of the auncient Fathers, which al are not to be reiected as vain & fabulous, for some part of them written by graue and learned men, whereof letting the rest passe for breuitie sake, I will rehearse one short historie.

It is to be séene in the life of Ioannes Chrysostom, that Basiliscus Bishop of *Comane* (who suffered as a Martir with Lucianus the priest at *Antioch*, vnder Maximianus the Emperour) appeared vnto Saint Chrysostome, when hée was in exile, and sayd vnto him: Brother Iohn, be of good comfort, for to morrow we shall be togither. But first he appeared to the priest of that Church, and sayd vnto him: prepare a place for our deare brother Iohn, who will shortly come hither. Which things the euent proued afterwards to be true.

Basiliscus appeared to Chrysostome.

CHAP. XIIII.

That in the Bookes set foorth by Monkes, are many ridiculous and vaine apparitions.

We made mention a litle before, of Chronicles written by Monkes. Now as touching their legendes of Saintes (as they terme their storehouses of examples, and liues of auncient Fathers, in the which are many apparitions of diuels & spirits,) verily there is no cause at all why we should ascribe much vnto them, for the most part of such stuffe as is set forth in them, haue no shewe nor likelihood of truth: perchaunce their minde was to bring men to great feare and Religion by those their counterfeited and imagined histories. But concerning these, this place now serueth not to intreate.

The like may be sayd, of many superstitious Popish writers, who following these mens steppes, haue written

many vpon other mens credit and reports, which least any man thinke I write, being moued with enuie or hatred of the persons, I will shewe you one onely historie or fable amongst so many, that you may thereby haue as it were a taste of that which I sayd euen now.

S. Seuerine Bishop of Colin.

Petrus Damanus, who first was a Monke after the order of S. Benedict, and afterward Bishop of *Hostia*, a man of great estimation among Papists, as well for the opinion they had of his learning, as for the shewe of his vpright liuing, telleth a storie of a certaine Monke of *Colein*, who on a time passing ouer a Riuer on horsebacke, espied Saint Seuerinus sometime Bishop of *Colein* on the Riuer, who not long before was departed this life, and being buried at that time, was much renowmed for doing sundrie miracles. The Bishop catcheth holde on the Monkes bridle, and would not let him passe any further: wherewith the Monke was sore afraide, and diligently enquired of him, why he being so notable a man, was there withholden in that place. The Bishop then required him to lende him his hand, that hee might vnderstand by feeling how it was with him, which when he had done, and that the Bishoppe had dipped the Monkes hande downe into the water, sodeinly in one moment all the flesh of his hand, by reason of the extreame heate, was scalded off, so that the bones only remained al bare. Vnto whom then the Monke, sith (quoth hee) thou art so famous a man in the Church, how commeth it to passe that thou art so grieuously tormented? The Bishop aunswered: only sayd hee for this cause, for that I haue not sayd ouer my Canonicall houres in due time distinctly as I should haue done: for I was in the Emperours Court busied and occupied with matters of his priuie Counsell, in the morning hudling vp all my prayers at once, all the rest of the day I was troubled with other businesse: and for that cause do I now suffer this punishment of miserable heat. But let vs both

togither

togither call vnto Almightie God, that it may pleaſe him to reſtore thy hand againe, which came preſently to paſſe aſſoone as they had thus ſaide. And then ſpake he to the Monke ſaying: Go my ſonne and deſire the brethren of our Church, as alſo al other of the Clergie there, to poure out their praiers for mée, to giue almes to the poore and néedie, and to perſeuere inceſſantly in offring vp continuall ſacrifice for me, for ſo ſoone as theſe things ſhalbe fulfilled, I ſhal be deliuered out of theſe my torments, and ſhal be ioyfully tranſlated to the fellowſhip of thoſe bleſſed Citizens of heauen, which do earneſtly deſire my company. Out of this hiſtorie, this argument or reaſon they make: If that good and godly Biſhop, who being ouercharged with affaires of the Emperour leading to publike wealth, could not diſpatch his talke of prayers in due time, and therefore is ſo miſerably vexed and tormented, what puniſhment may they looke for, which hauing no neceſſarie buſineſſe, ſay ouer the Canonicall houres very coldly, or elſe leaue them cleane vnſayd, that they may the better followe their owne luſtes and vaine deuiſes? And héere note by the way, they make no mention at all of omitting thoſe things which God hath expreſly commanded vs. But in caſe the Popiſh Biſhoppes do verily beléeue this ſtory to be true, let them thinke with themſelues, howe they can be able to excuſe themſelues before the iudgement ſeate of Almightie God, for that they are content to be created Biſhops of thoſe Churches, whereof notwithſtanding they haue no care or regarde, but either wholly intangle themſelues with worldly matters, or if they do deale in matters of the Church, their whole ſtudy is directed to this end, to ſtop the ſincere preaching of Gods word, and to tread thoſe vnder foote, whoſe mindes are occupied day and night, to the aduancing and ſetting forth of Gods glory. Of this ſtampe and ſort, are moſt of thoſe thinges wherewith the Monkes inferred and ſtuffed their bookes.

CHAP. XV.

A proofe by other sufficient writers, that Spirites doo sometime appeare.

Alexander ab Alexandro.

AS touching other notable writers, they also make mention of spirites which do oftentimes appear. Alexander ab Alexandro, an excellent Lawier, born at *Naples*, in his secõd booke *Genialium dierum*, and ninth chapter, writeth that a certain familiar friend of his, of good credite, did celebrate ỹ funeral of one of his acquaintance, and as he returned towards *Rome*, he entred into an Inne fast by the way, because it was night, and there laide himselfe downe to rest. As he laie there alone broad awake, sodeinly the image of his friend lately deceased, came before him maruellous pale and leane, euen as he was when he sawe him last on his death bedde, whome when he beheld, being almost besides himselfe with feare, he demaunded of him who he was: But the ghost making no answer, but slipping off his cloathes laide him downe in the same bedde, and drew neare, as if he would haue embraced him. The other gaue him place, and kéeping him off from him, by chance touched his forte, which séemed so extréemly cold, as no Ice in the world might be compared vnto it. Whereat the other loking very lowringly vpon him, toke vp his clothes againe, and rose out of the bed, and was neuer afterwards séene. He reporteth other historyes in the same place, which hapned in his time. He liued aboue foure score yeares ago, or neare that time.

Baptista.

Baptista Fulgosus, Duke of *Genua*, in his booke of worthy sayings and doings of Emperors, Princes, Dukes, &c. (which he wrote being in exile to auoyd idleneſſe: Touching straunge and monstrous things) writeth that in the

the Court of Mattheus, surnamed the great Shiriffe of the Citie, in the euening after Sunne sette, there was seene a man farre exceeding common stature, sitting on a horse in complete armour: who when he had bin there seene of many, by the space of an houre, in the end vanished away, to the greate terrour of those that beheld him. About three daies after in like maner, two men on horsebacke of the same stature, were seene in the same place, about three houres within night, fighting togither along season, and in the ende vanished away as the other dide before. Not long after, Henry the seuenth Emperor, departed this life, to the vtter vndoing of all the Shiriffes.

Immediately after this Historie, he putteth an other more worthie memorie than the foremost. Lodouicus father to Alodisius, ruler of *Immola*, not long after he died, appeared vnto a Secretarie, whom Louodicus had sente to *Ferraria*, as he was on his iourney, riding on a horse with a Hauke on his fist, as he was wonte when he liued, and willed the Secretarie (albeit wonderfully afraid) to bid his Sonne the nexte day to repaire vnto the same place, for he had matter of greate importance to declare vnto him. Which when Lodouicus heard, partly because he could not beleeue it, partly for that he doubted some body laye in waight for him, he sent an other to answere in his rome. With whome the same soule meeting as it did before, lamented very much that his Sonne was not come thither, for if he had so done, he saide, he would haue opened many other things vnto him. But as then he willed the messenger to tell him, that twentie two yeares, one month and one day being passed, he should lose the rule and gouernment whiche he nowe possessed. As sone as the time foreshewed by the ghost was expired, albeit he were very circumspect and careful, yet the same night, the souldiours of Philip Duke of *Millen*, with whom he was in league & therfore stood in no feare of him) came ouer the

ditches hard frozen with Ice vnto the walles, and raising vp ladders, toke both Citie and Prince togither.

Phillip Melancthon, writeth in his booke *De anima*, that he himselfe hath seene some Spirits, and ý he hath knowne many men of good credit, which haue auouched not only to to haue seene ghostes themselues, but also that they haue talked a great while with them. In his booke which he intituleth *Examen Theologicum*, he rehearseth this historie. Which was, that he had an aunt, who as she sat very heauily by the fire, after her husband was dead, two men came into her house, whereof the one being very like, said he was her husband deceased, the other being verie tall, had the shape of a Franciscan Friar. This that seemed to be the husband, came neare the chimney saluting his heauy wife, bidding her not to be afraide, for (as he said) he came to commaund her certaine things: then he bid the long Monke to go aside a while into the stoue hard by. And there beginning his talke, after many words, at the last he earnestly beseecheth, and most hartily desireth her, to hire a Priest to say Masse for his soule, and so being readie to depart, he biddeth her giue him her right hand: which thing (she being sore afraide) abhorring to do, after he had faithfully promised she should haue no harme, she giueth her hand, which albeit indeed it had no hurt, yet did it seeme to be so scorched, that euer after it remained blacke. This being done, he calleth forth the Franciscan, and hastily going forth togither, they vanish away. Ioannes Manlius, in his collectanies of Common places, writeth concerning other spirites which he and other men also did see, the first tome in the Chapter *De malis spiritibus & ipsorum operibus*, and also in the Chapter *De satisfactione*.

Melancthons Aunt.

Ludouicus Viues.

Ludouicus Viues, saith in his first booke *De veritate fides*, that in the new world lately found out, there is nothing more common, than not only in the night time, but also at noone in the midday, to see spirits apparantly, in the Cities

and

and fieldes, which speake, commaund, forbid, assault men, feare and strike them. The very same do other report which describe those nauigations of the great Ocean.

Hieronimus Cardanus of *Millen*, excellently seene in Philosophie & Phisicke, remembreth a great many of these apparitions, in his booke *De subtilitate, & varietate rerum:* which who so listeth to reade, I referre him to his bookes, for I am desirous to be briefe. Hieronimus Cardanus.

Olaus Magnus, Archbishop of *Vpsalia* in *Sueueland*, declareth in his history *De Gentibus Septentrionalibus*, the second booke and third chap. that spirits appeare in *Iseland*, in the shape & likenesse of such, as men are acquainted withal: whom the inhabitants take by the hand in stead of their acquaintance, before they haue heard any word of those their acquaintāce death, whose similitude and likenesse they take on them, neither do they vnderstand that they are deceiued, before they shrinke and vanish away. These things haue I brought togither both out of the olde and also new writers, that it might plainly appeare, that spirites do oftentimes walke and shewe themselues vnto men. Olaus.

CHAP. XVI.

Daily experience teach vs, that spirits do appeare to men.

TO all the premisses before handled, this also is to be added, which no man can deny, but that many honest and credible persons of both kindes, as well men as women, of whome some are liuing, and some already departed, which haue and do affirme, that they haue sometimes in the day, and sometimes in the night seene and heard spirits. Some man walketh alone in his his house, and behold a spirit appeareth in his sight, yea and sometimes the dogs also perceiue them, and fal down at their masters feet, and wil by no meanes depart fro them, for they are sore afraid themselues too. Some man goeth to bed, and laieth him downe to rest,

and

and by and by there is some thing pinching him, or pulling off the clothes: sometimes it sitteth on him, or lieth downe in the bed with him: and many times it walketh vp and downe in the Chamber. There haue bene many times men seene, walking on foote, or riding on horseback, being of a fierie shape, knowne vnto diuers men, & such as died not long before. And it hath come to passe likewise, that some eyther slaine in the warres, or otherwise deade naturally, haue called vnto their acquaintance bëing aliue, and haue bene knowne by their voice.

Spirites requiring helpe.

Many times in the night season, there haue bëene certaine spirits heard softly going, or spitting, or groning, who being asked what they were, haue made aunswere that they were the soules of this or that man, and that they nowe endure extreame tormentes. If by chaunce any man did aske of them, by what meanes they might be deliuered out of those tortures, they haue aunswered, that in case a certaine number of Masses were song for them, or Pilgrimages vowed to some Saintes, or some other such like dëedes donne for their sake, that then surely they shoulde be deliuered. Afterwardes appearing in greate light and glorie, they haue said that they were deliuered, and haue therefore rendred greate thankes to their good benefactours, and haue in like manner promised, that they will make intercession to God and our Ladye for them. And hereby it may be well proued, that they were not alwayes Priestes, or other bolde and wicked men, which haue fayned themselues to be soules of men deceased, as I haue before saide: in so much that euen in those mennes chambers when they haue bene shut, there haue appeared such things, when they haue with a candle diligently searched before, whither any thing haue lurked in some corner or no. Many vse at this day to search and sifte euery corner of the house before they go to bed, that they may slëepe more soundly: & yet neuertheleſſe, they

heare

heare some scriking out, and making a lamētable noise, &c.

It hath many times chanced, that those of the house haue verily thought, that some body hath ouerthrowne the pots, platters, tables and trenchers, and tumbled them downe the staires: but after it waxed day, they haue founde all things orderly set in their places againe.

It is reported, that some spirits haue throwne the dore off from the hookes, and haue troubled and set all things in the house out of order, neuer setting them in their due place againe, and that they haue maruellously disquieted men with rumbling and making a great noyse.

Sometimes there is heard a great noyse in Abbeis, and in other solitarie places, as if it were Coopers hooping and stopping vp wine vessels, or some other handicraftes men occupied about their labour, when it is most certaine, that all in the house are gone to bedde, and haue betaken themselues to rest.

When houses are in building, the neighbours many times heare the Carpenters, Masons, and other Artificers handling all things in such sort, as if they were busily labouring in the day time. And this straunge wonder is ioyfully receiued as a sure token of good lucke. Builders heare spirits in the night.

There be some which iudge it commeth to passe naturally, that we suppose we heare these things in the night, which we heard before in the day time. Which question I leaue to be discussed of better learned than my selfe.

Pioners or diggers for mettal, do affirme, that in many mines, there appeare straunge shapes and spirites, who are apparrelled like vnto other labourers in the pit. These wander vp and down in caues and vnderminings, and seem to besturre themselues in all kinde of labour, as to dig after the veine, to carry togither oare, to put it into baskets, and to turne the winding wheele to drawe it vp, when in very deed they do nothing lesse. They very seldome hurt the labourers (as they say) except they prouoke them by Diuels are in Mines.

laughing and rayling at them: for then they threw gravel stones at them, or hurt them by some other means. These are especially haunting in pittes, where mettall moste aboundeth.

A certain godly and learned man wrote once vnto me, of a siluer mine at Douosium in the *Alpes*, vpon the which Peter Buol a noble man, the Schultish of the same place, (whom they call Landammanus,) had bestowed great cost a fewe yeres before, and had gathered therby good store of riches. In the same myne was a spirite or Diuell of the mountaine, who when the labourers filled the stuffe they had digged into their vessels, he seemed, for the most parte, euery Fridaye, to be very busie, pouring the mettals of his owne accord out of one basket into an other. Wherewith the Schultish was not offended: and when he would eyther descende into the pit, or come vp againe, blessing himselfe with the signe of the Crosse, he neuer receiued hurt. It chaunced on a time that while the saide spirit was too busie intermedling himselfe with euery thing, one of the miners being offended therewith, began to raile at him very bitterly, and with terrible cursing words, bid him get him thence in the diuels name. But the spirit caught him by the pate, and so writhed his necke about, that his face stode behinde his backe, yet notwithstanding he was not slaine, but liued a long time after, well knowne vnto diuers of his familiar friends, which yet liue at this day, howbeit he died within a fewe yeares after.

Agricola. Georgius Agricola, whose learned workes which he wrote of mettalles, be yet extant in the end of his booke of creatures liuing vnder the earth, he maketh two kindes of Diuels haunting in certayne Mynes abroade. For hee saith, there are some cruell and terrible to behold: which for the moste parte, doo very much annoy and hurt the labourers digging for mettall.

Suche a one was hee which was called Annebergius, who

who only with his breath, destroyed aboue 12. labourers at once, in the Caue called Corona Rosacea. The wind wherwith he slewe them, he let slæ out of his mouth: for he appeared in the similitude and likenesse of an horse.

Such an other was Snebergius, who wearing a blacke roll about his necke, toke vp a labourer aloft from the ground, and set him in the brinke of a certaine exceeding deepe place, where had sometime bene great store of siluer, not without græuous bruising of his bodie.

And againe he saith, there be some very milde and gentle, whom some of the Germanes call Cobali, as the Grecians do, because they be as it were apes and counterfeiters of men: for they leaping and skipping for ioy do laugh, and seeme as though they did many things, when in very deed they do nothing. And som other call them clues, or dwarfes of the Mountaines, thereby noting their small stature, wherein they commonly appeare. They seeme to be hoare, wearing apparell like the mettall Finers, that is, in a peticoate laced, and an aperne of leather about their loynes. These hurt not the labourers, except they misuse them, but do imitate them in all their doings. And he saith, they are not much vnlike vnto those whom the Germanes call Guteli, because they seeme to beare good affection towards men, for they keep horses, and do other necessary businesse. They are also like vnto them whom they call Trulli, who taking on them the feined shapes of men and women, do serue as it is sayd, like seruants, both amongst other nations, and specially amongst the Suetians.

Touching these spirits haunting Mines of mettal, there is somewhat to be read in Olaus Magnus de Gentibus Septentrionalibus, the first booke and tenth Chapter.

They which saile on the great Ocean sea, make report, that in certaine places, where the Anthropophagi do inhabit, are many spirits, which do the people there very much harme.

VVhich are people that eate and deuoure men.

Here many straunge things might be brought concerning visions appearing vnto men in their slæpe: and also of them, which being in a traunce, haue lyen a whole day and more without mouing, lyke vnto dead men: and after being restored to themselues againe, haue told many miraculous things which they haue sæne.

Cicero. Cicero writeth of maruellous things in his booke of diuination, or soothsaying. And so do many other men also.

Augustine. Augustine himselfe reciteth in many places of his bookes, that some after they were dead, haue warned many their friends of diuers matters, and haue disclosed vnto them secrete things, which were to come, and haue shewed sicke folkes good remedies for their diseases, and haue done many such like things.

Auenzoar Albumato, a Phisitian of *Arabia*, writeth, that he receiued an excellent medicine for his sore eyes, of a Phisitian lately deceased, appearing vnto him in his slæp: as Marcilius Ficinus doth testifie, writing of the immortalitie of the soule. Lib. 16. cap. 5.

Marsilius.

Mat. 1. & 2. The holy Scriptures also teach vs, that God hath reuealed many things vnto men by dreames. S. Mathew in his first and second chapter writeth, that the Angell of God appeared many times vnto Ioseph, our Sauiour Christes foster father in a dreame, and commaunded him to beware of those which laie in wayt to destroy Christ Iesus.

Acts. We reade in the tenth Chapter of the Acts of the Apostles, that S. Peter fell into a traunce, sawe the heauens open, and sawe a vessell, as it were a great sheete, descend downe vnto him from heauen, knit togither at the foure corners, wherein were all maner of foure foted beastes of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the heauen. And there came a voyce vnto him: Rise Peter, kill and eate.

Acts 16. And in the 16. Chapter, as S. Paul was yet in *Asia*, comming downe towardes *Troada*, this vision appeared vnto him:

him: There ſtode a man of *Macedonia* and prayed him, ſaying: Come into *Macedonia* and helpe vs. Hereby Paule gathered, it was the will of God, that he ſhould paſſe the ſea, and ſhould preach the Goſpell in *Macedonia*.

But I purpoſe not to write of ſpirites and viſions appearing vnto men in their ſléepe, leaſt my Booke grow vnto an huge volume: but only of thoſe which we ſenſibly ſée when we are awake.

CHAP. XVII.

That there happen ſtraunge wonders and prognoſtications, and that ſodein noyſes and cracks and ſuch like, are heard before the death of men, before battaile, and before ſome notable alterations and chaunges.

IT happeth many times, that whē men lie ſicke of ſome deadly diſeaſe, there is ſome thing heard going in the chamber, like as the ſicke men were wont, when they were in good health: yea & the ſicke parties themſelues, do many times hear the ſame, and by and by geſſe what will come to paſſe. Oftentimes a litle before they yéeld vp ẏ ghoſt, and ſometime a litle after their death, or a good while after, either their own ſhapes, or ſom other ſhadowes of men, are apparantly ſéen. And diuers times it commeth to paſſe, that when ſome of our acquaintaunce or friends lie a dying, albeit they are many miles off, yet there are ſome great ſtirrings or noiſes heard. Sometimes we think ẏ houſe wil fal on our heads, or ẏ ſome maſſy & waighty thing falleth down throughout all ẏ houſe, rendring and making a diſordered noiſe: and ſhortly within fewe moneths after, we vnderſtand that thoſe things happened, the very ſame houre ẏ our friends departed in. There be ſome men, of whoſe ſtock none doth die, but that they obſerue and

marke some signes and tokens going before: as that they heare the doores and windowes open and shut, that some thing runneth vp the staires, or walketh vp and downe the house, or doth some one or other such like thing.

But here I cannot passe this in silence: that there are many superstitious mē, which vainly persuade themselues that this cousin, and this or that friend of theirs will shortly die. For in the end, the falling out of the matter it selfe, sheweth it was a vaine and foolish persuasion, that they vnderstood such things by any signes.

Cardanus. Cardanus in his booke *De veritate rerum*, writeth, that there was a certaine noble Familie at *Parma* in *Italy*, out of the which so often as any one died, there was seene an olde woman in the chimney corner. On a certaine time shee appeared, when a mayden of the same family laie very sick, and therfore they cleane dispaired of her life: but some after she recouered again, and in the meane while, an other, which was then in good health, sodainly died.

There was a certaine parish priest, a very honest and godly man, whome I knew well, who in the plague time, could tell before hand, when any of his parish should die. For in the night time he heard a noyse ouer his bed, lyke as if one had throwne downe a sacke full of corne from his shoulders: which when he heard, he would say: Now an other biddeth me farewell. After it was day, he vsed to inquire who died that night, or who was take with ỹ plague, to the ende he might comfort and strengthen them, according to the dutie of a good pastor.

It hath bin often obserued in Guilde Halles where Aldermen sit, that when one of those Aldermen was at the point of death, there was heard some ratling about his seate, or some other certaine signe of death. The same thing happeneth beside pewes and stalles in Churches, or in other places where men are often conuersaunt, or accustomed to exercise their handie labour.

In

In Abbies, the Monkes seruants or any other falling sicke, many haue heard in the night, preparation of chestes for them, in such sort as the Toffin-makers did afterwards prepare in deed.

In some country villages, when one is at deaths doore, many times there are some heard in the Euening, or in the night, digging a graue in the Churchyard, and the same the next day is so founde digged, as these men did heare before.

There haue bin séene some in the night when the Mone shined, going solemnely with the corpes, according to the custome of the people, or standing before the doores, as if some bodie were to bee carried to the Church to burying. Many suppose, they sée their owne image, or as they say, their owne soule, and of them diuers are verily perswaded, that except they die shortly after they haue séen themselues, they shall liue a very great time after. But these things are superstitious. Let euery man so prepare himselfe, as if he should die to morrow, least by being to secure, he purchase himselfe harme.

There happen other straunge things also. For when some lye in the prison in chaines, readie to suffer punishment for their offences, many times in the night season, there is heard a great noyse and rumbling, as if some bodie were breaking into ỹ gaile to deliuer the prisoners. When men come to vnderstand the matter, they can neither hear, nor sée any bodie, and the prisoners likewise say they heard no maner thing.

Some executioners or hangmen do report, that for the most part, they know before hand whether any man shall shortly bee deliuered into their handes to suffer: for their swordes will moue of their owne accord. And there are other that say, they can tell before, after what sort the prisoners shall suffer.

Many wonderfull and straunge things happen about those

those which wilfully cast away themselues. Sometime their corpses must be carried a great way off, before they being thrust in a sack can be throwne into the sea: and being laid in a waggon or cart, the horse could scant draw them downe the hill, but vp the hill they néed not labour at all, for the cart would runne very fast of his owne accord.

Some men being slaine by théeues, when the théeues come to the dead bodie, by and by there gusheth out freshe blood, or else there is declaration by other tokens, that the théefe is there present. Plato writeth in the first booke of his lawes, that the soules of such as haue bene slaine, do oftentimes cruelly molest & trouble the soules of those which slew them. For which cause Marsilius Fiscinus doth thinke it chanceth, that the wound of a man being slaine, while the carkasse lieth on the ground, doth send out blood against him, which wounded him, if he stand neare loking on his wound. Which thing both Lucretius affirmeth to come to passe, and also Iustices haue diligently obserued. Dido in Virgil thus threatneth Aeneas.

De animorum immortalitate li. 16. cap. 5.

Virgil.

And when the cold of death is come, and body voyd remaines,
Each where my haunting spirit shall pursue thee to thy paines.

The like place is in Horace & in other Poets. As a théefe sitteth at the Table, a cuppe being ouerthrowne, the wine pearceth through the whole and sound wood of the Table, to all mens admiration.

Touching these and other such maruellous things, there might be many histories and testimonies alleaged. But whosoeuer readeth this booke, may call to their remembrance, that they haue séen these and such like things themselues, or that they haue heard them of their friendes and acquaintance, and of such as deserue sufficient credit.

Before the alterations and chaunges of kingdomes and in the time of warres, seditions, and other dangerous seasons, ther most commõly happen very strange things in the aire, in ẏ earth, and amongst liuing creatures clean cõtrary

to

to the vsuall course of nature. Which things men cal, wonders, signes, monsters, and forewarnings of matters to come. There are seene in the aire, swords, speares, & suche like, innumerable: there are heard and seene in the aire, or vppon the earth, whole armies of men encountring togither, and when one part is forced to flye, there is heard horrible cries, and great clattering of armour. Gunnes, launces and holberdes, with other kindes of weapons and artillerie, do often times moue of their owne accord as they lye in the armories. When as souldiers marche towards their enimies, and their ensignes will not displaie abroade but fold about the standerbearers heads: if the souldiours be therewith amazed, they surely perswade themselues there is some great slaughter towardes. It is saide also, that horses will be very sad and heauie, and will not lette their masters sit on their backes, before they go to the battaile wherin they shall haue the ouerthrow: but when they are corragious and lustilie neighing, it is a sure token of victorie. Suetonius writeth, that the company of horses which Iulius Cæsar let run at libertie, neuer to be put to labour againe, did weepe aboundantly when Cæsar was slaine. Suetonius.

When Miltiades addressed his people against the *Persians*, there were heard tirrible noyses before the battaile, and certaine spirits were seene, which the Athenians afterwards affirmed to be the shaddowe of Pan, who cast suche a feare on the *Persians*, that they turned their backs and fled. Thereof Terrores Panici toke their name, being spoken of sodayn feares vnlooked for, and terrours, suche as Lymphatici metus are, which driue men out of their wits being taken therewith.

Before the *Lacedemonians* were ouerthrowne in ỹ battaile at Leuctris, the armour moued, & made a great noise in the temple of *Hestor*. At the same time the doores of Hercules temple at Thebes being fast shut with barres, opened sodainly of their owne accord: and the weapons and ar- Cicero de diuinatione.

mour which hong fastned on the wall, were found lying vppon the grounde. These things are to be read in Cicero his first booke Dediuinatione.

In the second warres of *Carthage*, the standerd-bearer of the first battaile of pikemen, could not remoue his ensigne out of his place, neither yet whē many came to helpe, they could any thing preuayle. These and suche other signes of euill lucke, Caius Flaminius the Consull, nothing regarded, but sone after his army was discomfited, and he himselfe slaine. Concerning which matter, Titus Liuius writeth at large. In the beginning of the warres waged with the people called Marsi, there was heard out of secrete places, certaine voyces, and noyse of harnesse, which foreshewed the daunger of the warres to come.

Liuie.

Plinie writeth in his.2.booke and 59.chapter, that in the warres with the *Danes*, and many times before, there was heard the clashing of armour, and the sound of trumpets out of Heauen.

Plinie.

Appianus declareth what signes and wonders went before the ciuill warres at *Rome*: what miserable cries of men clashing of armour, and running of horses were heard, no man seeing any thing.

Appianus.

Valerius Maximus in his firste booke and 6. chapter of straunge wonders, writeth how Cneius Pompeius had warning before, not to fight the fielde with Iulius Cesar: for as he launced off, at Dirrachium, his souldiours were taken with a sodayne feare: and in the night likewise before the battaile, their hearts and courages sodainly failed them. And after, the same author addeth that which Cesar himselfe rehearseth in his 3. booke De bello ciuili: how that the very same day wherin Cesar fought his fortunate battaile, the crying of the armie, and the sound of trumpets was heard at *Antioche* in *Syria*, so sensibly, that the whole citie ranne in armour to defend their walles. The very same thing he saith, happened at Ptolemais, and that at

Valeri. Max. li. 1. cap. 6.

Per-

Pergamus in the moſt priuie and ſecret parts of the temple where none may enter, ſaue only prieſts, which place the *Grecians* call ἄδυτα, there were heard the ſound of drummes and timbrels.

The hiſtoriographers reporte, that Caſtor and Pollux haue bœn often ſœne in battailes ſitting on white horſes, & valiantly fighting againſt ỹ enemies campe. Plutarch writeth in Coriolanus life, that they were ſœne in the battaile againſt Tarquinius, and that immediatly after, they bare tidings to *Rome* of the victory. The ſelfe ſame writeth Titus Liuius alſo in his 8. booke of his firſt decade. We may reade in the hiſtory of the ſiege of the noble citie of *Magdeburge* in *Saxonie*, that the enimie which laide ſiege to the towne, ſo often as the citizens iſſued out to ſkirmiſh with them, ſuppoſed that one vpõ a white horſe came riding before the citizens battaile, when as the citizens themſelues ſawe no ſuch man. Ioſephus in his bookes of the warres in *Iurie*, recordeth what ſtraunge ſignes happned before the deſtructiõ of Ieruſalem: which were, that a braſen gate being faſt rampierd with barres, opened in the night time of his owne accord. And that before the Sunne ſet, there were ſœne chariots in the aire, and armies of men well furniſhed, enuironing the citie rounde about. And that at Whitſontide, as the prieſts entred the temple to celebrate diuine ſeruice, they heard a great noiſe, and by & by a voice crying Migremus hinc. Let vs depart hence. He reckeneth vp other like things, which we nœde not repeate in this place. The ſame night that Leo of Conſtantinople was ſlayne in the temple, the trauellers by ſea heard a voice in the aire which ſaid: that Leo had roared out euen to the ſame place.

Caſtor and Pollux. Plutarch.

Ioſephus.

Felix Malleolus doctor of both ỹ lawes, maſter of Solodor, & canon at Tigurũ, a mã of great reading, as it may eaſily appeare by his lerned writings which ar yet extãt. (For he liued about ỹ time whẽ ỹ Coũcell of Baſil was holdẽ) writeth in his booke de nobilitate, c. 30. ỹ it is to be ſœn in ỹ hiſtorie

Felix Malleolus.

of Rodulphus king of the Romanes, that when the said Rodulphus had vanquished Othotarus, King of *Boemia*, continuing on the place all night, where the battell was fought, about midnight, certain Spirits or Deuils, with horrible noise and tumulte, troubled and disordered his whole armie. And that those were spirits walking by night, it appeared hereby, that they sodeynly vanished away like smoake.

The same Author writeth in his xxvi. chapter, That in the yeare of our Lord 1280. as one of the Plebans (as they call them) belonging to the churche of *Tigurine* preached to the people, the graue stone of the tumbe or sepulchre of the two martires Felix and Regula, patrones of the same place, violently brake asunder, no man mouing or touching it, giuing a horrible sound like vnto thunder, so that the people were no lesse astonished and afraide, than if the vaute of the Churche had fallen downe. And he saith, that the same yeare, the third day of October, the greater part of the citie of Tigurum was brent with fire, and moreouer, that sedition was moued amongst the Citizens, for certaine Ecclesiastical disciplines, and for the Imperiall Fanne (as they terme it.) In the yeare of our Lord. 1440. the twelfe day of December, at ỹ dedication of the foresaid churche, about midnight, there was the like noise heard, and immediatly after followed ciuill warres, which the *Tigurins* held with vncertaine successe against the other Heluetians, for the space of seuen yeares and more.

The same writer in the. 33. Chap. hath, that at the same time in the yeare of our Lorde. 1444. before that valiaunt battaile, which a feawe Heluetians fought against the innumerable companie of Lewes Dolphin of Fraunce, fast by the wals of Basill, in the time of the generall Councell, there was heard certaine nightes about those places, the alarme of Souldiours, the clattering of harneys, and the noyse of men encountring togither. &c.

Here

Here I purpoſely omit many ſuch like examples, for there are many bookes, both of auncient and alſo of newe writers, touching ſtraunge ſignes and wonders, wherein theſe may be redde.

CHAP. XVIII.

It is proued by teſtimonies of holy ſcripture, that ſpirites are ſometime ſeene and heard, and that other ſtraunge matters do often chaunce.

YEt perchaunce it will be obiected vnto vs, that we bring no teſtimony out of holy ſcripture, touching this matter: eſpecially to proue, that Spirits do oftentimes appeare vnto men. I anſwer, that truth it is, There are fewe things hereof in the ſcriptures, and yet notwithſtanding ſomewhat is to be redde in them. It is read in S. Matthew his fourteenth Chapter, of Chriſts Diſciples, that when in the night ſeaſon, by reaſon of a contrary wind, they were in great danger of drowning in the lake of Genazareth, and that in the dawning of the day, the Lord walked on the water, they being afraide, cried out, ſuppoſing they ſawe a Spirit. Hereof we gather, Luke 14. that they knew well inough, that Spirits appeared vnto men vpon ſea and land.

Likewiſe when the Lord being riſen from death, appeared vnto his Diſciples, meaning to aſſure them of his reſurrection, they thought at the firſt, that they ſawe a Spirit. In the which place, Chriſt denieth not but there are Spirits and ſtraunge ſightes, and that they are ſometimes ſéene, but he rather confirmeth the ſame by putting a difference betweene himſelfe, and Spirits of vaine apparitions. But as touching theſe two teſtimonies, we wil ſpeak more in another place.

2. Samuel. It is a notable history which we reade in the seconde Booke of Samuel concerning Saule, who, at what time the Philistians warred vppon him, and that he was in verie great daunger of them, he came to a woman, who was a witch, and desired her to raise Samuel from death, that he might know his counsell touching the successe of the wars. She raised him vp one, whom Saule tooke to be Samuel indéede, who also tolde him what euente shoulde come of the warres. But whether hée were a true Samuel or a counterfait, wée will dispute the matter more at large in his conuenient place.

2. Samuel. 1. Paral. 14. As concerning other maruellous things, there is somewhat to be read in the Scriptures: In the seconde of Samuel & the fift chap. Also in the first of Paralipomenon, and the. xiiii. chap. we reade, that the Philistines went vp the seconde time into Iurie, to make warres on Dauid: Hé went vnto the Lord, and shewed him the matter, who commaunded him, that he shoulde embushe himselfe behinde the wood with his armie, and when he heard a rustling or noise in the toppes of the trées, he should immediatly sette vppon them. This sounde they say was a strange and supernaturall sound.

2. Reg. 6. 7. It is written in the second booke of the Kings the. vi. and vii. chapters, that God deliuered the citie of *Samaria* from great famine, when it was fiercely besieged by Benhadad king of the *Assirians*, for in the night season their enemies did heare the noise of the chariots, the neighing of horsses, and shréeching of a huge armie, as it were in their owne pauillions and tentes, supposing therefore, that the kyng of Israel had gathered togither his fotemen and horsemen, and had nowe sette vppon them, they sought to saue themselues by flighte, leauing their victuall and other prouision behinde them in their tentes.

1. Samu. 7. In the first of Samuel and the seuenth chapter, God caused a wonderfull greate noyse to sounde ouer the Philistians,

liſtians, and ſo deſtroyed them. I meane they were ſo affrighted with a kinde of ſtraunge feare, that it was an eaſie matter to vanquiſh them.

In the fifth Chapter of Daniel ye may reade, that king Balthaſar in his royſting banquet, eſpied right againſt the candle, a hand writing vpon the wall what his end ſhould be. *Daniel 5.*

It is redde in the third Chapter of the ſeconde of the Machabees, that there appeared a horſſe vnto Heliodorus, ſeruant vnto Seleucus king of *Aſia*, as he was about to deſtroy the temple of *Hieruſalem*: and vpon the horſſe ſæmed to ſit a terrible man, which made towards him to ouerrun him. On eache ſide of him were two yong men of excellent beautie, which with whippes ſcourged Heliodorus. 2. *Macha.* 3.

The ſecond of the Machabees and tenth chapter, Iudas Machabeus encountred with his enemies, and when the battaile was hotte, there appeared vnto the enemy out of heauen, fiue men ſitting on horſſes, rayned with notable bridles of gold, who ledde the Iewes hoſte, and two of them defended Machabeus from all his enemies. And vnto Machabeus appeared a horſman in a ſhining garment, his armour all of gold, and ſhaking his ſpeare. Whereby it was ſignified, that he ſhould obtaine a notable and famous victorie. 2. Macha. 11. 2. *Mach.* 10. 2. *Mach.* 11.

I alleadge not theſe examples, for that I adiudge the bookes of Machabees, of as good authoritie as the Canonicall bookes of the new and old Teſtament: but only for that they are ioyned togither with them, and may be read of euery one: and they were alwaies read of the auncient people. For albeit they neuer went about to approue any doctrine by them, yet were they of great authoritie amõgſt them.

Chap.

CHAP. XIX.

To whome, when, where, and after what sort, Spirites do appeare, and what they do worke.

BY all these examples we may plainly perceiue, that many strange things are obiected to mens senses, and that sometimes Spirits are séene and heard, not only (as some haue thought, as Plutark witnesseth in the life of Dion) of children, women, sicke folkes, dottards, and otherwise very plain and simple creatures, but also to men of good courage, and such as haue bin perfectly in their wits. Yet it may not be denied but that there appeare many more vnto some, than vnto other some, as vnto trauellers, watchmen, hunters, carters, and marriners, who leade all their life not only in the day time, but also in night, in iourneying, in the water, woods, hills and vallies. You shall méete with some one who neuer sawe nor heard any of this geare in all his life time, and contrariwise, there be other some which haue séene and heard very many such like things.

So there are some which very seldom chance vpon Serpents, and againe, many there are which oftentimes méete with them in their iourney. The common people say, that those whose natiuities chance vpon the Angaries (for so they terme the foure seasons of the yeare) do sée more store of spirits, than those which are borne at other times, but these are méere trifles. Those which are stedfast in true faith, sée or heare such things more seldome than superstitious people, as in all other things. He that is superstitious, vseth some blessing (as they call it) to heale his Horses disease, and it taketh good effect: he enchaunteth a Serpent, and it cannot once moue out of the place. He applieth a blessing to staunche blédyng, and it stoppeth presently: he

He taketh a hollie rod, or twisted wand inchanted, & it will moue where a mettle mine is: but he that is of a sounde fayth and doth despise these things, (for he knoweth well they are contrary to the word of God, and also to the Popes decrées) albeit perchaunce he practise such things, yet notwithstanding he can bring nothing to passe. And so also it chaunceth that he seeth spirites and vaine visions, a great deale more seldome than superstitious men do, for hée knoweth well what hée ought to déeme and iudge of them. There are some kinde of men, who thinke it a gay thing, if many such straunge sights appeare vnto them.

There were farre many more of these kindes of apparitions and myracles séene amongest vs, at such times as we were giuen vnto blindnesse and superstition, than since that the Gospell was purely preached amongest vs: the cause whereof I will shewe hereafter.

And moreouer it commeth oftentimes to passe, that some one man doth heare or sée some thing most plainly, when an other which standeth by him, or walketh with him, neyther seeth, nor heareth any such matter.

We reade in the history of Heliseus, that he sawe chariottes of fire, and many horsmen vpon the toppe of the Mountaine: and yet his seruaunt sawe nothing vntill the Prophet prayed vnto the Lord, that he would vouchsafe for his confirmation and consolation, to open his eyes that he might also behold this notable miracle. So likewise we reade in the 9. chapter of the Actes of the Apostles, that Christ ouerthrew Paule before *Damascus*, and that he spake vnto him, and his companions also hearde the voice. Afterwardes in the 22. chapter, Paule himselfe shewing vnto the people in the presence of Lycias, in the Castle at *Hierusalem*, what had happened vnto them, saith that they heard not the voice of him that talked with him: which two places are not repugnant, for the meaning is, that they heard a voyce or sounde indéede, but they vnderstood

Some men see things which other men see not.

Actes 9.

Actes 22.

derstod not what the Lord had sayd vnto him.

Socrates familiar. Plato writeth in his dialogue called *Theages*, that Socrates had a familiar spirit, who was woonte to put him in mynd to cease from labouring, when that which he attempted should haue no happie successe. This spirit he himselfe sawe not, and other men heard not. They say that sometimes Children doe see certaine things, which other men see not, and by a certaine peculiar operation of nature, some men behold that which others in no wise can perceiue.

At what time spirits appeare. As touching the time when spirits appeare, we reade in histories that it shall be after a thousand yeares which God hath appoynted, in the which time Sainte John prophesied in the Apocalips, that Sathan shoulde be lette lose, that is to saye, errours and superstition, and al kinde of mischefe shuld abound, and many spirits appear euery where: for men gaue them more credite, than the Scriptures. If a spirit appeared, or was heard to say in case these or those things be decreed, to wit, vowed Pilgrimage, and erecting Chappelles, and that this shall be an acceptable kinde of worship vnto God, the Bishoppes and paryshe Priestes weighed not whether those things were agreeable to the word of God or no, &c. Spirits appeared in old time, and do appeare still in these dayes both day and night, but especially in the night, and before midnighte in our first sleepe. Moreouer, on the frydayes, satterdayes, and fasting dayes, to confirme superstition. Neither may we marueil, that they are heard more in the night, than in the day time. For he who is the author of these things, is called in the holye Scriptures the Prince of darkenesse, and therefore he shunneth the light of Gods word.

In what place spirits are seen And albeit these are heard or seene in al places, yet are they most especially conuersant in the fieldes where battels haue bene fought, or in places where slaughters haue bene made: in places of execution; in woods into the which they haue conjured deuils being cast out of men: in Thur-

ches,

ches, Monasteries, and about Sepulchers, in the bounds of countries, and buts of lands: in prisons, houses and towers, and sometime also in the ruines and rubbish of Castles.

God threatneth the Babilonians in the 13. chap. of Esay, that Spirits and Satyres shal daunce where their magnificent houses and Pallaces were, where they were wont to lead their daunces. And in his 34. chapter, where he threatneth destruction vnto all nations and enemies of God, he saith: In the ruincus and tottering Pallaces, Castles, and houses, horrible spirites shall appeare with terrible cries, and the Satyro shall call vnto her mate, yea and the night hags shall take their rest there. For by the sufferaunce of God, wicked diuels worke straunge things in those places where men haue exercised pride and crueltie.

Esay 13. Monsters of the desart. *Esay* 34.

The maner of appearing of spirits, is diuers and manifold, as it appeareth by those things which I haue alleaged before. For they shewe themselues in sundry sorts: sometimes in the shape of a man whom we know, who is yet aliue, or lately departed: and otherwhile in the likenesse of one whom we know not.

After what sort spirites appeare.

I heard of a graue and wise man, which was a Magistrate in the Territorie of *Tigurie*, who affirmed, that as he and his seruant went through the pastures, in the sommer very early, he espied one whome he knew very well, wickedly defiling himselfe with a Mare, wherewith being amazed, he returned back againe, and knocked at his house, whom he supposed he had seen, and ther vnderstood for a certaintie, that he went not on foote out of his chamber ỹ morning. And in case he had not diligently searched out ỹ matter, the good & honest man had surely bin cast in prison, and put on the rack. I reherse this history for this end, that Iudges should be very circumspect in these cases, for ỹ diuell by these meanes doth oftentimes circumuent ỹ innocent. Chunegunda wife vnto Henry the 2. Emperour of ỹ name, was greatly suspected of adultery, and thereuppon many false

rumors scattered, that she was too familiar with a certaine yong man in the Court, for the Diuell in the likenesse of the same yong man, was oftentimes seene come out of the Empresse Chamber. But she afterwards declared her innocencie by treading vppon hotte glowing ploughshares, (as the custome was then) without any hurting her feete, as witnesseth Albertus Cranzius, in his fourth booke, and first Chapter of his *Metropolis*.

We reade that many spirites haue appeared vnto certaine Hermites and Monkes in the shape of a woman, alluring and intising them to filthie lust. They appeare also in the fourme of brute beastes, sometime foure foted, as of a Dogge, a Swine, a Horse, a Goate, a Catte, or a Hare: and sometimes of foules, and creeping wormes, as of a Crow, a night Owle, a schritch Owle, a Snake, or Dragon, whereof the Gentiles had great plentie in their Temples and houses, and nourished them, as we may reade euery where in the Poets. Spirits haue sometimes appeared in a pleasaunt fourme, and sometimes in a horrible shape. At one time some hath bene seene ryding on horsebacke, or going on foote, or crawling vppon all foure. At an other time hath appeared a man all burning in fire, or beraide with blood: and somewhile, his bowelles haue seemed to traile out, his belly being as it were ripped vp. Sometimes a shadow hath onely appeared: sometimes a hand, sometimes an instrument, as a staffe, a sworde, or some such lyke thing which the spirite helde in his hande. Sometimes he appeared in maner of a bundle of hey, burning on fire: another while onely a hoarse kinde of voyce was heard. Sometimes a spirit hath bene heard walking in the inner parte of the house, turning the leaues of a booke, or telling money, or playing at dice, or bounsing against the wall. And sometimes there is heard a terrible noyse or clappe, as if a peale of Gunnes were discharged hard at hand. And spirits sometimes, taking a man by the

arme

arme or by the haire of the head, haue walked with them.

Olaus Magnus in his third booke and eleuenth Chapter *De Gentibus Septentrionalibus*, writeth, that euen in these our dayes, in many places in the North partes, there are certaine monsters or spirites, which taking on them some shape or figure, vse (chiefly in the night season) to daunce, after the sounde of all maner of instruments of musicke: whom the inhabitants call companies, or dances of Elues, or Fairies. Somewhat also is to bee reade touching this matter in Saxo Grammaticus, in his historie of *Denmarke*. Such like things are those which Pomponius Mela reporteth in his third booke of the description of *Aethiopia*, that in *Mauritania* beyonde the Mount *Atlas*, many times in the night season are seene great lightes, and that tinkling of Cymballs, and noyses of Pipes are also heard, and when it is daylight no man appeareth. Solinus writeth in his thirtie eight and fortie foure chapters, that in this same Mountaine, Ægiptians vse euery where to leade their daunces: of whom also Plinie maketh mention in his first booke and first Chapter. Men holde opinion, that they are Panes, Faunes, and Satyres, of whom the olde writers haue mentioned many things.

Olaus.

Daunces of Spirits.

Saxo.

Pomponius Mela.

Solinus.

Saint Hierome writeth in the life of Paule the Hermit, that an Hippocentaure, appeared vnto S. Anthonie, in the same shape which is described of the Poets. In a stonie valley (saith he) he espied a Dwarffe of a small stature, hauing a croked nose, and his foreheade rough with hornes: the hinder part of his bodie, and his feete like vnto a Goate. Anthony nothing amazed with this sighte, taketh vnto him the shield of faith, and the pretiplate of hope, lyke a good warriour. Notwithstanding the foresayde creature presented him with Dates, to refresh him in his iourney, as witnesses of peace and friendship. Which when Anthonius vnderstood, he staide, and enquiring of him what he was, receiued this answere. I am (quoth he) a mortall

Hierome.

A Fable out Hierome, of a Centaure, A Monster hauing the forepart like a man, the hinder like a horse.

creature, and one of the inhabitants of this desart, whome the Gentiles, being deceiued with many errors, doth worship, calling vs Faunes, Satyrs, and night Mares.

And I am sent as Embassador from our company, who earnestly beseech thée, that thou wilt pray vnto the God of all creatures for vs, whom we acknowledge to be come into the world, to saue the same, &c.

Plutarch. And here we may in no wise ouerpasse in silence, that notable historie which Plutarch in his booke *De fectu oraculorum*, (translated by that learned man Adrianus Turnebus) reciteth in these words. Touching the death of diuels, I haue heard a certaine historie of one who was neither foolish, nor accustomed to lye. For it was Epitherces, my countrey man, a professour of Grammer, father vnto Æmilianus the Rhethoritian, of whome some of you also haue heard the same: He told me, that when he once tooke ship, meaning to go into *Italie*, because he carried with him not only great store of marchandise, but also very many passengers, in the euening when they were about the Ilands Echinadæ, the wind quite ceased, and that the shippe driuing in the Sea, being brought at the last vnto *Paxe*, many then waking, and many also quaffing after they had supped, sodeinly there was heard a voyce of one which called Thamus, in such sort that euery man maruelled. This Thamus was a Pilotte borne in *Egipt*, vnknowne vnto many which were in the ship. Wherefore being twice called, he held his peace, and the third time answered: then the other with a louder voyce commaunded him, that when he came vnto Palodes, hé should tell them that the great God Pan was departed. When this was heard, euery man was amazed with feare, as Epitherces affirmed vnto vs: And being in consultation whether they should do as was commaunded or not, Thamus thus iudged of the matter: that if the winde did blowe, they must passe by with silence, but if it were calme without winde, he must vtter

that

that which we had heard. When therefore they were come to *Palodes*, and no wind ſtirred, nor waue moued, Thamus loking out of the ſterne towards the lande, cryed out as he had heard, that the great God Pan was deceaſed: Hée had ſcant ended thoſe wordes, when immediatly there followed a great groning, not of one man, but of many, being admirt as it were with great admiration. And becauſe many were preſent in the ſhip, (they ſaid) the fame hereof was ſpédely ſpred abroad at *Rome*, and Thamus ſent by Tiberius ỹ Emperour, who gaue ſo much credit vnto the matter, that he diligently enquired, and aſked who that Pan was. The learned men whome he had in great number about him, ſuppoſed that Pan was he, who was the ſonne of Mercurie and Penelope, &c.

These and ſuch like things, (Euſebius who alſo reciteth this hiſtorie) affirmeth to haue chaunced in that time of Tiberius, in the which Chriſt being conuerſant amongſt men, expelled all maner of diuels from the ſocietie of them. Other moſt godly profeſſours of our Religion, affirme, (as namely Paulus Marſus, in his Annotations vppon the firſt of Ouids Faſti) that this voyce was heard out of *Paxe*, the very ſame night enſuing the day wherein our Lorde ſuffered, in the 19. yeare of Tiberius, which was the ſame yeare that Chriſt was crucified in: by the whiche voyce being vttered in a wilderneſſe of ſolitary rockes, it was declared that our Lord and God had ſuffered for vs. For the word Pan in Græke, ſignifieth all: and then the Lord of al the world was crucified.

De préparatione Euang. li. 5. chap. 9.

Paulus Marſus.

He addeth moreouer, that Theodoſius doth ſay, that the *Archadians* do worſhip this God, calling him τὸν τῆς ὅλης κύριον, meaning thereby to ſignifie a Lorde and Ruler, not of wordes, but of all manner of materiall ſubſtances: whoſe power is ſuche, that it is able to create the eſſence and ſubſtaunce of all bodies, whether that they be heauenly, or earthly. And albeit he referre this vnto the Sunne,

yet

yet if a man marke diligently, his mysteries haue a higher meaning, &c.

Hunting of Diuels.

Hereunto belongeth those thinges which are reported touching the chasing or hunting of diuels, and also of the daunces of dead men, which are of sundry sortes. I haue heard of some which haue auouched, that they haue seene them.

No man is able to rehearse all the shapes wherein spirits haue appeared, for the diuell, who for the most part is the worker of these things, can (as the Poets faine of Proteus) chaunge himselfe into all shapes and fashions.

These walking spirites sometimes stoppe the way before men as they trauell, and leade them out of their way, and put them in suche great feare, that sometimes they become grayheaded in one night. I remember I haue heard the like historie of my olde friende Iohn Willing, a godly and learned man, of one in the Countie of *Hannow*, who not many yeares ago, meeting with a walkyng spirite in the night season, was so much altered, that at his returning home, his owne Daughters knewe him not.

Spirites oftentimes awake men out of their sléepe, and cause many to forsake their owne houses, so that they cannot hire them out to any other. Sometimes they ouerthrow some what, or strike men, or cast stones at them, and hurt them either in their bodies or in their goods: yea and sometime God doth suffer them to bereaue men of their liues. It often chaunceth that those mens faces and heads do swel, which haue seene or heard spirits, or haue bene blasted with them: and some are taken mad, as we see by experience. I remember well it hath happened, that some supposing they haue seene armed men, who were ready to take them, haue therefore assaied to slaie themselues: which thing may be by craft of the diuel. Spirites do also trouble cattell in the night time, in the pastures.

This

Thus much concerning the first part of this worke, wherein (I trust) I haue proued, and made it euident, that albeit there be many which vainely perswade themselues they haue seene wandring spirits, or haue beheld one instéed of an other: yet notwithstanding that there are walking spirits, and that other strange things do sometime happen.

I haue also shewed vnto whome they appeare especially, and where, when, after what sort, or in what fourmes they shewe themselues, and what things they worke and bring to passe.

Whosoeuer dare flatly deny these manifold and agréable testimonies of the olde and new writers, he séemeth vnworthie in my iudgement, of any credit, whatsoeuer he say. For as it is a great token of lightnesse, if one by and by beléeue euery man which saith, he hath séene spirits: so on the other side, it is great impudency, if a man rashly and impudently contemne all things which are aduouched, of so many, and so credible Historiographers, and auncient Fathers, and other graue men of great authoritie.

The seconde parte of this Booke doth shewe, that those Spirits and other straunge sights, be not the soules of men, but either *good or euil Angels, or else some secret and hid operations.*

CHAP. I.

The opinion or beliefe of the Gentiles, Iewes, and Turkes, concerning the estate of Soules seperated from their bodies.

IN the second part of this booke we haue to consider, what those things be which (as wee haue before shewed) are both heard and seene, in the day time and in the night, whether they be the soules of dead men or no: also what the olde writers haue iudged of them, and what the holy scriptures, do teach vs herein.

Platos opinion. Plato doth think, that Heroicall and excellent soules, as being of the pure sort, do mount aloft: but that other base and viler soules, that are defiled with the pleasures & lustes of the bodie, do wander below on the ground, and the same he deemeth to be those spirits which are eftsoones seene.

Also other heathen and prophane writers say, they are hereby moued to thinke that the soules of men do liue after

after death, for that it is most cleare and euident, that many spirits wander and raunge hither and thither, and are oft times heard and seene, and founde to talke with men: for they suppose that most of these are mens soules. Tertullian a very auncient writer, in his booke *De anima*, saith, that the wise Heathens, which did define the soule to be immortall, (for some of them, as namely the Epicures, thought that the soules died with their bodies) thought that the soules of the wise, if they departed from their bodies, hadde their abiding on high: but the rest were throwne downe into Hell. Tertullian.

Furthermore, the Heathen thought the Soules should stray continually abroade before they founde rest, vnlesse the bodies from which they were seuered, were rightly buried in the earth. Wherefore (as we may reade in Poets) it was a grœuous crime to caste forth any bodie vnburied. Hector in Homere, besought Achilles that he woulde not cast forth his carcasse to be deuoured of Dogs and birds, but that he would deliuer the same to be entered by olde Priamus his father, and Hecuba his mother. Patroclus appeared in a vision by night after his deathe vnto Achilles, and requested him to bestowe vppon him all funeral solemnities. For otherwise he saide the soules of those that were buried, woulde thrust him backe, that he should not be able once to enter in at Hell gates. Which example Tertullian aledgeth, and therwithal cõfuteth this vaine opinion of the heathen. Palinurus in Virgill, besought Æneas, that he woulde cast earth on him, when he was dead, and erect vnto him an hearse, for so did they call those Monuments of the deade, in whiche albeit no man was layde, yet were they vsed in the honour of the deceassed. Virgill writeth, that Deiphobus his Ghost wandred abroade, vnto the whiche Æneas erected an Hearse. Homer. Virgil.

For the Gentiles were of suche an opinion in those dayes, that they thought an emptie and counterfeyted

buriall profitted very much. Moreouer the heathen were perſwaded that the ſoules which dyed before their naturall time (eſpecially of thoſe whiche periſhed by violent death, whom they call βιοθανάτους, as by hanging, drowning, or beheading, &c.) did ſtraie abroade ſo long time as they ſhould haue liued, if they had not bin ſlain by violent death. Which opinion Tertullian alſo confuteth. Plato in his ninth booke *De legibus*, writeth, that the ſoules of thoſe which are ſlain, do purſue their murtherers ſo farre, that they do hurt them: the which, except it be vnderſtood by way of a Metaphor, is likewiſe to be reiected.

Plato.

The Catholike faith amongſt the Iewes was, that the ſoules of the dead did not returne into this earth, but either were at reſt, which was when they died in the faith of the promiſed Meſſias, or were cõdemned if they departed hence in their ſinnes without repentance. For Iob in his ſeuenth Chapter ſaith: Euen as the cloude vaniſheth and fadeth away, ſo he that goeth downe to the graue ſhall come vp no more, nor returne into his houſe, &c.

The Iewes opinion.

Iob.7.

But if thou wilt ſay that Iob was an Ethnicke, it may be alleaged of Dauid, that when he was in very great danger, and death euen preſent before his eyes, he praied in the 31. Pſalme. Into thy hands O Lord I commend my ſpirit. The Preacher alſo in his 12. Chapter ſaith: The ſpirite ſhall returne to God that giueth it. In the booke of Wiſedome (which of olde writers is attributed to Philo Iudeus) the third Chapter thereof, it is written: the ſoules of the righteous are in the hande of God, and no torment ſhall touch them. And on the other ſide, the ſoules of the wicked go downe into hell. In the 49. Pſalm it is written of thoſe wealthie worldlings, which for lucres ſake, depart from God and his Commaundements: They are laid as ſhéepe in Hell, Death ſhall conſume them, and Hell is their habitation, &c.

Pſal.31.
Eccle.12.
Wiſd 3.
Pſal.49.

If the Iewes had beléeued, that the ſoules after this life were

were tormented in Purgatorie, no doubt amongſt ſo many diuers kinds of ſacrifices, which they offered for the ſinnes of the liuing, they would at leaſt haue ſome one kind of ſacrifice wherby to redéeme ſoules, or in ſome part to aſſuage and mitigate their paines. And that ſoules do returne after death, do offer themſelues to be ſéene and beheld of men, and require aide of them, we finde no where in the old Teſtament, but rather the contrary. In the 2. of Samuel 12. Dauid ſpeaketh this of his yong childe, that he begat by Berſaba, that he could not bring him into life againe, that hee would go to him, and the childe ſhould neuer returne vnto him againe. And Ieſus the ſonne of Syrach, in his 38. chapter ſaith: There is no returning from death. Of the viſion which was ſhewed to Samuel, we will ſtraightway ſpeake in his proper place. 2. *Samu.* 12. *Eccle.* 38.

And that in latter ages, long after Chriſt came in flesh, there were ſome amongſt the Iewes, who thought that the ſoules ſeparated from their bodies, did ſtraie and raunge abroad: it may hereby be gathered, for that certaine of the Rabbines write, that the ſoule of Naboth (which was ſlain, becauſe he would not ſell his Vineyard to Achab) was that ſpirit that promiſed his helpe to ſeduce Achab, being as it were one that coueted his death.

The Turkes alſo beléeue that the ſoule is immortall, and that aſſoone as they are loſed from the bodie, they come either into a place of reſt, or of torment. But whether that they did thinke, that ſoules returned againe into the earth, and roue there to and fro, I could finde no plaine mention thereof in their *Alcaron*. The Turkes opinion.

CHAP. II.

The Papists doctrine touching the soules of dead men, and the appearing of them.

Papists.

THe Papists in former times haue publikely both taught and written, that those spirites which men somtime see and heare, be either good or bad angels, or els the soules of those which either liue in euerlasting blisse, or in Purgatory, or in the place of damned persons. And that diuers of them are those soules that craue aide and deliuerance of men. But that this doctrine of theirs, and the whole state therof may be the more euidently perceiued, we will more largely repeate the same out of their owne bookes. Iacobus de Cusa, a *Carthusian* Friar, and Doctor of diuinitie, wrote a booke of ỹ Apparition of soules, after they were seperated frō the bodies: which worke of his, hath in it many superstitious toyes, and was Printed in a Towne belonging to the dominion of *Berna*, named *Burgdrose*, in the yeare of our Lord, 1475.

Iacobus de Cusa.

Popish writers commenting on the 4. booke of the Maister of Sentences, do appoint foure places to receiue soules, after they are departed from the bodies. Three of the which places they say are perpetuall, and one which lasteth but for a time already limitted.

Foure places for soules.
Heauen.
Hell.
Limbus puerorum which is a place wher the Papistes imagine the soules of yong childrē to be, which departed without Baptisme.
Purgatorie.

The first place or receptacle is *Calum Empireum*, the firie heauen, so termed of his passing great brightnesse and glory, which they say is the seate ordeined for ỹ blissed sort: this place by an other name in scripture is called Paradise. The second place is Hell vnder the earth, being the Mansion of Diuels and Infidels, departing hence in deadly sinne, without repentance. The third place they tearme *Limbus puerorum*, which is prouided as well for the children of the faithfull, as of the vnfaithfull: who (they say) shall

ſhall continually abyde there without any ſenſe of payne, being only depriued from the fruition of Gods preſence. And therefore they ſay, that after their death, they ought not to be buried in holy buriall. The fourth place is Purgatorie, which is prepared for them that departe hence without deadly ſinne, or if they committed any ſuch ſinnes, did ſome penance for them, but yet made not full ſatisfaction for them, or elſe went hence only ſtained with venial ſin.

Of this place, to wit, Purgatorie, Popiſh writers teach maruellous things. Some of them ſay, that Purgatorie is alſo vnder the earth as Yell is. Some ſay that Yell and Purgatorie are both one place, albeit the paines be diuers according to the deſerts of ſoules. Furthermore they ſay, that vnder the earth there are more places of puniſhment in which the ſoules of the deade may be purged. For they ſay, that this or that ſoule hath bin ſeene in this or that mountaine, floud, or valley, where it hath committed the offence: and that theſe are particuler Purgatories, aſſigned vnto them for ſome ſpeciall cauſe, before the day of Judgement, after which time all manner of Purgatories, as well general as particuler ſhall ceaſe. Some of them ſay, that the paine of Purgatorie is all one with the puniſhment of hel, and that they differ only in this, that the on hath an end, the other no ende: and that it is far more eaſie to endure all the paynes of this worlde, whiche all men ſince Adams time haue ſuſteined, euen vnto the day of the laſt Judgement, than to beare one dayes ſpace the leaſt of theſe two puniſhmentes.

Further they holde that our fire, if it be compared with the fire of Purgatorie, doth reſemble only a painted fire. Seeke their Doctours in this pointe, on the fourth booke of Sentences, the 20. diſtinction.

This queſtion alſo they moue, by whome the Soules in Purgatorie are tormented. Wherfore their opinions are very diuers, and diſagreeable among themſelues. By whome Soules are tormented in purgatorie.

Richardus

Richardus de Media Villa a *Franciſcan* Frier, writeth vpon the Maiſter of Sentences, and ſaith, he verily beléeueth that ſoules are caried by good Angels, into the places of torment, but yet that they themſelues do not torment them, becauſe they ſhall become at length fellow citizens with them. Neyther yet are they puniſhed by Deuils (who after this life do no longer tempte men) but only by the mére iuſtice of God. And yet (ſaith he) it may ſo come to paſſe, that the Deuils be preſent at the doing thereof, and reioyce at their toztures. I thought good to repeate theſe things of Purgatozie ſomewhat at large, the rather foz that the reader might ſée, that their Doctours do diſagrée in a matter of great weight, by which they haue both robbed men of their wealth, and plunged them into very great miſerie.

Papiſts feigne that ſoules returne to earth againe.

Hérvnto they adde, that the ſpirits, as well of the good, as the ill, do come and are ſent vnto men liuing, from hell. And that by the common lawe of iuſtice, all men at the day of Iudgement ſhall come to their trial from hell: and that none befoze that time can come from thence. Farther they teache, that by Gods licence and diſpenſation, certaine, yea befoze the day of Iudgement, are permitted to come out of hell, and that not foz euer, but only foz a ſeaſon, foz the inſtructing and terrifying of the liuing. Hérvppon they recite diuers kindes of viſions, that certaine Clarkes, and Laye perſons being damned, bothe men and women, haue appeared to their ghoſtly fathers, and others, and haue opened vnto them the cauſes of their damnation: all which to rehearſe hére were loſt laboure. And that the ſoules which be in euerlaſting ioye, oz in Purgatozie, do often appeare, it may be ſéene in Gregories Homelies and Gregories Dialogues, who writeth that Peter and Paule, and other Saintes, did not onely appeare vnto holie men, but did alſo conducte their Soules vnto Celeſtiall ioye. Mozeouer that God doth licence

ſoules,

ſoules to return from thoſe two places, partly for the comfort and warning of the liuing, and partly to play aide of them. And yet that thoſe ſoules do not here repreſent themſelues to be ſéene of men, when, and how often ſoeuer they liſt themſelues. No doubt theſe men ſhewe themſelues to haue a ſharpe wit and profound knowledge.

These Doctors moreouer moue this queſtion, whether we may requeſt without offence, that the ſoules of ſuch as are departed, may ſhewe themſelues to be beheld and ſéene of the liuing. VVhether we may wiſh to ſee ſpirits.

To riue aſunder this crabbed knotte, they bring this wedge: that if this requeſt proceede of ſome good intent, without the ſpot of lightneſſe & vanitie, that a man might vnderſtand the ſtate of ſome friend, neighbour, benefactour, or of his parents, or ſome other, therby to helpe and relieue them ſpedily of their torments, it is no offence at all: becauſe dead mens ſoules do of their owne accord ſhew themſelues vnto the liuing, to receiue helpe of them, and therefore nothing can let vs to aſke this thing at Gods hand. Of this opinion is Thomas of Aquine.

But as concernyng the time and place, when and where Spirites do proffer themſelues to be ſéene, they ſay, no certaine rule can be giuen: for this ſtandeth wholly in Gods pleaſure, who if he liſt to deliuer any, ſuffereth him to make his appearaunce forthwith, euen in ſuch places as he may be well heard in. And that ſpirits do not alwayes appeare vnder a viſible ſhape, but ſometimes inuiſibly, in ſo much that ſometime nothing elſe is heard of them but ſnéeſing, ſpitting, ſighing, and clapping of hands &c. Of which point I haue noted ſomewhat before, when I ſpake generally of ghoſtes, becauſe they appeare in ſundry ſorts. And whereſoeuer theſe ſpirits be, they ſay, that they endure punishment. Beſides that ſoules do not appeare, nor anſwere vnto euery mans interrogatories, but that of a great number they ſcantly appeare vnto one.

How a man ought to ase himself when spirits appeare according to the Papists. *Dan.*10.11.

And therefore they teache. Whensoeuer such visions of spirits are shewed, men should vse fasting and praier or euer they demaunde any question of them: which (say they) in the tenth and eleuenth Chapters of Daniell, is read to haue bene done by Daniell himself. Besides this, shrift, and massing should be vsed ere we question with them: farther, that we should not giue credit assone as we heare but one sign, but waite to heare the same thrice repeated, which in the *1.Samu.3.* first booke of Samuel and third Chapter, is read to haue bin done by Samuel being yet a childe: for otherwise the diuell may delude and deceiue vs, as he doth very often. And so soone as these thinges are dispatched and performed, that foure or fiue deuout priests are to be sent for, which should come to the place where the spirit was wont to shew himselfe, and that they should vse certaine ceremonies, as to take a candle that hath bene halowed on Candlemasse day, and light it: also holy water, the signe of the Crosse, a censor in their hand, and when they light their candle, should pray ouer it (as I remember) the seuen penitential psalmes, or read the Gospell of S. Iohn. And when they come to the place, they should sprinkle it with holy water, and perfume it with Frankincense, casting about their neckes a holy stoale, and then that one of them kneeling on his knees, should rehearse this praier following.

O Lord Iesu Christ, the searcher of all secrets, which art alwaies wont to reueale healthfull and profitable things vnto thy faithful people and litle ones, which hast permitted some certaine spirit to shew himselfe in this place: we humbly beseech thee of thy great mercy, by thy death & passion, and by the sheading of thy most precious bloud for our sinnes, that thou wilt vouchsafe to giue in charge to this spirite, that he may declare and open what he is, without any fraying or hurting of vs, or of any other creature besides: shewing vnto vs thy seruants, or to other sinners as we be, who he is, why he is come, and what he desireth, so

that

that hereby thou maiſt be honoured, he comforted, and thy faithfull people alſo holpen and ſuccoured. In the name of the father, the ſonne, and the holy ghoſt. Amen.

Yet do they teach, that a man may chooſe to vſe this or ſome other forme of praier, and ceremonies: becauſe that without theſe, ſpirites haue often appeared, & ſhewed what they required. This done, we ſhould (as they teach) fall to queſtioning with them, and ſay: Thou ſpirite, we beſeech thee by Chriſt Jeſus, tell vs what thou art, and if there be any amongſt vs, to whome thou wouldeſt gladly make anſwere, name him, or by ſome ſigne declare ſo much? After this, the queſtion is to be moued, eache man there preſent being recited whether he would anſwere vnto this or that man. And if at the name of any, hee ſpeake, or make a noyſe, all other demaunds remaining, ſhould be made vnto him: As theſe and ſuche lyke. What mans ſoule he is? for what cauſe he is come, and what he doth deſire? Whether he require any aide by prayers and ſuffrages? Whether by Maſſing, or almes giuing he may be releaſed? Farther, by how many Maſſes that may be compaſſed, by three, ſix, ten, twentie, thirtie. &c. Furthermore, what manner of prieſts ſhould ſay Maſſe for him, Monke, or ſecular prieſts. Then if he aſke for any faſting, by what perſons, how long, and in what ſort he wold haue it done: If he require almes deeds, what almes deeds they ſhould be, how many, and on what perſons beſtowed, whether on him that lacketh harbour, or that is diſeaſed of the leproſie, or on ſome other ſort of people.

Furthermore, by what ſigne it may be perfectly knowne that he is releaſed, and for what cauſe he was firſt ſhut vp in Purgatorie. And yet they hold, ỹ no curious, vnprofitable, or ſuperſtitious queſtiõs ſhuld be demanded of ỹ ſpirit, except he wold of his own accord reueale and open thẽ. And ỹ it were beſt, ỹ ſober perſons ſhuld thus queſtiõ wth him, on ſom holiday before diner, or in ỹ night ſeaſõ, as is commõly

accuſtomed. And if the ſpirite will ſhewe no ſigne at that time, the matter ſhould be deferred vnto ſome other ſeaſon, vntill the ſpirit would ſhewe himſelfe againe: and yet that the croſſe and holy water ſhould bee left there, for that by the ſecret iudgement of God, it was ordeined, that they ſhould appeare at certaine houres, and to certaine perſons, and not vnto all men. And farther, they ſay that we nede not to feare, that the ſpirite would do any bodily hurt vnto that perſon, vnto whome it doth appeare. For if ſuch a ſpirit would hurt any, he might iuſtly be ſuſpected that he were no good ſpirit.

By what tokens good ſpirites may be diſcerned from euill. *Luke* 1.

Moreouer, popiſh writers teach vs to diſcerne good ſpirits from euill, by foure meanes. Firſt they ſay, that if he be a good ſpirit, he will at the beginning, ſomewhat terrifie men, but againe ſone reuiue and comfort them. So Gabriel with comfortable words did lift vp the bleſſed Virgin which before was ſore troubled by this ſalutation. They alſo alleage other examples. The ſecond note is to diſcrie them by their outwarde and viſible ſhape. For if they appeare vnder the forme of a Lyon, Beare, Dog, Toade, Serpent, Cat, or blacke ghoſte, it may eaſily be gathered that it is an euil ſpirit. And that on the other ſide, good ſpirits do appeare vnder the ſhape of a doue, a man, a lambe, or in the brightneſſe, and cleare light of the Sunne.

We muſt alſo conſider whether the voyce whiche we heare be ſweete, lowly, ſober, ſorrowfull, or otherwiſe terrible and full of reproach, for ſo they terme it.

Thirdly we muſt note, whether the ſpirit teache ought that doth varie from the doctrine of the Apoſtles, and other Doctors approued by the Churches cenſure: or whether he vtter any thing that doth diſſent from the faith, good maners, and ceremonies of the Church, according to the Canonical rites or decrees of Councels, and againſt the lawes of the holy church of *Rome*.

Fourthly, we muſt take diligent heede whether in his

words,

wordes, deedes, and iestures, he do shewe forth any humilitie, acknowledging or confessing of his sinnes & punishments, or whether we heare of him any groning, weeping, complaint, boasting, threatning, slaunder or blasphemie. For as the beggar doth rehearse his owne miserie, so likewise do good spirits that desire any helpe or deliueraunce. Other signes also they haue to trie the good Angels from the bad: but these are the chiefe.

Now touching the suffrages or waies of succour, whereby soules are dispatched out of Purgatorie, Popish doctors appoint foure meanes: That is, the healthfull offering of the sacrifice in the Sacrament of the aultar, almes giuing, prayer, fasting. And vnder these members, they comprise all other, as vowed pilgrimages, visiting of Churches, helping of the poore, and the furthering of Gods worship and glory, &c. But aboue all, they extoll their Masse, as a thing of greatest force to redeeme soules out of misery: of whose wonderfull effect, and of the rest euen now recited by vs, they alleage many straunge examples. How we may helpe and succoure soules.

Of these things they moue many questions, the which who so lust to see, let him search their bookes which haue bin written and published of this matter.

Neither only in their writings, but in open pulpit also they haue taught, how excellent and noble an act it is, for men touched with compassion, with these foresaid workes to ridde the soule that appeareth vnto them and craueth their help, out of the paines of purgatorie: or if they cannot so do, yet to ease and allwage their torture. For say they, the soules after their deliuerance, ceasse not in moste earnest maner to pray for their benefactors, and helpers. On the other side, they teach that it is an horrible and heynous offence, if a man giue no succoure to suche as seeke it as his hands, especially if it be the soule of his parents, brethren and sisters. For except by them they might conueniently be released of so manifolde miseries, they woulde not so A notable deede to relieue soules.

earnestly craue their helpe. Wherefore say they, no man should be so voyd of naturall affection, so cruell and outragious, that he should at any time deny to bestowe some small wealth, to benefit those, by whom he hath before by diuers and sundry waies bene pleasured.

If they were not the soules of the dead which craue helpe and succour, but diuellish spirits, they would not will them to pray, fast, or giue almes for their sakes: for that the diuels do hate those, as also all other good workes.

CHAP. III.

What hath followed this doctrine of the Papists, concerning the appearing of mens soules.

By these meanes it came to passe, that the common sort were of opiniõ, that those spirits which wer seen and heard, were the soules of the dead, and ỳ whatsoeuer they did say, was without gainsaying to be beléeued. And so the true, simple, and sincere doctrine of ỳ calling vpõ God in the name of Christ Iesus only: of the confidence in Christs merits, and redemption from sin and damnation: of ỳ true deeds of Christian charitie, was daily more and more impugned and oppressed. So that when men by litle and litle, forsoke holy scripture, and cast it aside, mens traditions and precepts began straightway to be had in great price and estimation, yea, they were more regarded than Gods owne word. A great offence was it taken to be, if any would presume once to breake mens traditions. On those apparitions of spirits, as on a sure foundatiõ of their Purgatory is chefly builded. For by talke had with them, Popish writers taught that men atteined vnto saluation, by their owne, and by other mens merits: which opinion so blinded them, that they became retchlesse, secure, and sluggish. For if a-

ny

ny dyd so perſwade himſelfe, that he coulde hyre one for mony, which could worke one feate or other to deliuer the deade from torments, then woulde he either delay the amendment of his life, or vtterly neglect it. Wherfore vnto ſuche fellowes, that happened, whiche chaunced vnto the fiue foliſh virgins, of whom mention is made in the .25. of Matthew. By theſe apparitions of ſpirits, maſſes, images, ſatiſfaction, pilgrimages for religion ſake, relikes of ſaints, monaſticall vowes, holidaies, auricular confeſſion, and other kinds of worſhippings and rites, and to be ſhort, all things whiche haue no grounde in holy ſcripture, by little and little grewe into authoritie and eſtimation. So that the matter came at the laſt to that extremitie and exceſſe, that many deuoute, and ſimple ſoules, pinched and nipped their owne bellies, that they might ẏ better haue by theſe meanes, wherewithall to finde and mainteine idle monks and prieſts, and to offer vnto images. They founded chappels, alters, manaſteries, perpetuall lights, anniuerſaries, frieries, and ſuch like, to releaſe their friends out of the torments of Purgatorie. And this did the walking ſpirits will them to do. And ſometime alſo by their councell, mens laſt willes & teſtaments were altered. Hereby prieſts and monks increaſed daily, their pariſhes, colleges & monaſteries with yerely reuenewes, & got into their hands ẏ beſt farmes, vineyards, lands, medowes, pondes, parkes, bond men, iuriſdictions, great lordſhips, and the authoritie of the ſword. For after ẏ this opiniõ once toke firme rote in mẽs harts, ẏ mens ſoules did walke after their death, & appeare on ẏ earth, the greateſt part did whatſoeuer they commanded thẽ. And ẏ it may more plainly be perceiued how much mẽ eſteemed thoſe viſions & ſuch like pelf, & how in memorial of thẽ they deuiſed & framed to thẽſelues new kinds of worſhippings, I will recite vnto you one or two hiſtories.

Monkes by their doctrine of ſpirits haue heaped infinit riches.

Martinus Polonus Archebiſhop of Conſentine, and the Popes Penitẽtiarie, writeth in his Chronicles, that Pope Clement

Martinus Polonus.

Clement the fourth did canonize for a Saint at *Viterbe*, one Eduergia, Dutchesse of *Polonia*, a widdow of great holinesse, who (among many notable things that are written of her) when her canonization had bene many yeares delaied, at length appeared her selfe in a Vision to her Proctor in the Court of *Rome*, being heauie and pensiue about this matter, and certified him, both of the spedie dispatching of this businesse, and also of the day wherin it should be dispatched. Canonization amongst the Ethnicks, from whence it toke his originall, is named ἀποθεωσις, that is, deification, or making of a God.

All soules day whéce it took originall.

Ioannes Tritenhemius Abbotte of *Spanheim*, a man of great authoritie, in his booke of Chronicles teacheth, that the memorie of all faithfull soules, termed All soules day, had his originall obseruation by this meanes: that when a certaine Monke returned from *Ierusalem*, and lodged in a certaine Hermits house in *Sicill*, about the mount *Aetna*, which flasheth forth fire, he learned of the saide Hermit, that many soules of the dead were tormented there by fire, out of which again through the praiers of the faithful, they were released, as it was taught him by the testimony euen of the spirites themselues.

Polydore.

Hereof also writeth Polydore Virgil, in his first booke, and 9. Chapter, *De inuentione rerum*, that the feast of All hallowes had the very same originall, whiche they shall finde in *Petrus de natalibus* his tenth booke, and first Chapter. Wherby thou maist gather, that Feastes were first ordeyned by the tales of spirites appearing vnto men. The like fable is founde in Damascene, who writeth of Macharius thus: When according to his maner he prayed for the dead, and was desirous to vnderstande whether his prayers did profitte them ought, and whether they receiued any comfort thereby, God willing to reueale so muche to his seruaunt, inspired a drie scull with the word of truth, so that the dead scull brake forth into these words: When thou praiest for the dead,

we

we receiue comfort by thy praiers.

Of the like rote sprung the order of the Carthusian Monkes, which of the common sort is iudged to be the most holiest and straightest order: of the which the Monks themselues of this brode haue put forth a booke. For as Polydore Virgil recordeth, they began vpon this occasion in the Vniuersitie of *Paris*, in the yeare of our Lord 1080. A certaine Doctor which for his learning and integritie of life was very famous, chaunced to die, when he should haue bene buried in a certaine Church, he cried out with an horrible voyce: I am by the iust iudgement of God accused. Wherupon they left the Coffin in the Church by the space of three dayes, during which time the people flocked together out of sundry places, to behold this straunge sight. The second day he cried againe: By the iust iudgement of God I am iudged. The third day likewise he cried: I am by the iust iudgement of God condemned. And as Vincentius Bellonacensis saith, some adde hereunto, that he rose vp thrice vpon the bere, which perchaunce they faine of their owne heads. Now because no man suspected that so notable and famous a man was vtterly condemned for euer, euery man was sore astonished thereat.

The beginning of the order of Carthusians. Polydore.

Wherfore Bruno, a Doctor of diuinitie borne in *Coleine*, forthwith forsoke all that he had, and taking to him fiue other godly companions, gat him into a desart called *Carthusia*, in the dioceese of *Grationopolis*: where he erected the first monasterie of that order, which drawing his name of the place, was called the Carthusian order. For this cause also, or for the like, many other monasteries at the first beginning, were both founded and endowed with great liuelihood.

CHAP. IIII.

Testimonies out of the word of God, that neither the soules of the faithfull, nor infidels, do walke vpon the earth after they are once parted from their bodies.

Soules go either to hell or to heauen.

NOw that the soules neither of the faithfull nor of infidels do wander any longer on the earth, when they be once seuered from the bodies, I wil make it plaine and euident vnto you by these reasons following. First, certaine it is, that such as depart hence, either die in faith, or in vnbelief. Touching those that go hence in a right beliefe, their soules are by and by in possessiō of life euerlasting, and they that depart in vnbelief, do straightway becom partakers of eternal damnatiō. The souls do not vanish away & die with the bodie, as ỳ Epicures opinion is, neither yet be in euery place, as som do imagin: touching this matter I wil alleage pithie & manifold testimonies out of the holy scripture, out of which alone this questiō may and ought to be tried & discussed. Our Sauiour Christ Jesus which could well iudge of these misteries, in the 3. of Iohn saith: So God loued the world, ỳ he wold giue his only begotten son, ỳ who so beleæueth on him, shuld not perish, but haue life euerlasting. For god sent not his son into ỳ world to cōdemn ỳ world: but that ỳ world by him might be saued. He ỳ beleæueth in him is not cōdemned, & he ỳ beleæueth not, is cōdemned alredy, because he beleæued not in ỳ name of ỳ only begotten son of god. And in ỳ 5. of Iohn he saith: Verily verily I say vnto you: he that heareth my word, & beleæueth on him ỳ sent me, hath euerlasting life, & shall not come into iudgemēt or cōdemnation, but hath passed alredy frō death to life: he doth not say ỳ his sins shuld first be purged in purgatorie. And in the 6. cha. he saith: This is ỳ wil of him ỳ sent me, that euery one ỳ seeth the son, and beleæueth on him, should haue life euerlasting, and I will raise him vp at the last day againe: verily I say vnto you, he that beleæueth on me hath life euerlasting. In the 14. of Iohn, also our Sauior Christ Jesus saith, that he wil take vs vp to himselfe, that where he is, there should

Iohn 3.

Iohn 5.

Iohn 6.

Iohn 14.

we

we be also.&c. When Christ sent forth his disciples to publish his gospel in ỳ 10.of Mat.he said vnto them:Go ye into the whole world,and preach ỳ gospel to euery creature: he ỳ beleeueth and is baptized, shalbe saued, and he ỳ beleeueth not shalbe cõdemned:& in the 5.cha.of ỳ 2.to ỳ Cor ỳ apostle S.Paul saith: we know ỳ if the earthly house of this tabernacle be destroied, we haue a building of God, ỳ is, a house not made wõ hands,but eternal in ỳ heuens,&c. By these places it may be euidently gathered, ỳ the soules of the faithful are takẽ vp into eternal ioy:and the soules of the vnfaithful assone as they are departed frõ their bodies are condemned to perpetual tormẽt. And ỳ this is done straightway after death,may be perceiued by the words ỳ Christ spake to the thefe on the crosse, when he hong on his right hand:This day shalt thou be with me in paradice. And in the 14.cha.of the Apoc.it is written, And I heard a voice ỳ said vnto me, write, Blessed ar ỳ dead ỳ die in the lord, ἀπαρτι amodo,as the old trãslatiõ redeth, ỳ is by & by,out of hand, without delaie. Steuẽ in the very point whẽ he loked to be stoned,cried lord Iesu receiue my spirit. He douted nothing,but was assuredly persuaded ỳ his soul shold straitway be translated to eternal ioy. Paul in the 1.chap.of his epist.to the Philip.saith: I desire to be losed, or I couet to depart hence, and to be with Christ. Here is no mentiõ at all of purgatory, in which the soules should be first purged. If thou wilt here obiect that the persons afore alleaged were saints and martirs, we say farther,that paradice was opened also to the thef,assone as he became repentant. And that the soules both of the faithful & vnfaithful,which presently after their death are translated to heauẽ or hel,do not return thence into the earth before the day of the last iudgement,may wel be perceiued by the parable of the rich man cloathed in purple,and Lazarus, as we read in the 16.of Luke. For when the rich man prayed Abraham that he would send Lazarus vnto him, to cole his tong,Abraham gaue him this answere: Betwixt thee

Mat.10.

2.Cor.5.

Luke 23.

Apo.14.

and vs, there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would go hence (from Abrahams bosome) to you (in Hell) cannot: neither can they come from thence to vs.' And when he besought him, that he would send Lazarus to his fathers house to admonish his fiue brethren, least they also should come into that place of torment: he saide vnto him; They haue Moses and the Prophets, let them heare them. And again: If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they beleeue though one rose againe from the dead.

CHAP. V.

Testimonies of the auncient Fathers, that dead mens soules parted from their bodies, doo not wander heere vppon earth.

August. THis matter was also thus vnderstood by the holy and auncient Fathers. For Augustine in his 18 Sermon *De verbis Apostoli*, hath, that there be two mansions, the one in euerlasting fire, the other in the euerlasting kingdome.

Idem. And in his 28. Chapter of his first booke, *De peccatorum meritis & remissione contra Pelagianos*, in the seuenth tome of his workes, he saith: Neither can any man haue any middle or meane place, so that he may be any other where than with the diuel, who is not with Christ.

Idem. And in his notable worke *De ciuitate Dei*, the 13. booke and 8. Chapter, he saith: The soules of the godly so soone as they be seuered from their bodies be in rest, and the soules of the wicked in torment, vntil the bodies of the one be raised vnto life, and the other vnto euerlasting death, which in scripture is called the second death.

Iustine. Iustine also an auncient Father, writeth in *Responsione ad Orthodoxos, quest.* 75. that the difference of the iust and vniust, doth appeare euen assone as the soule is departed from

from the body. For they are carried by the angels into such places as are fit for them: that is, the soules of the iust are brought vnto Paradice, where they haue the fruition of the sight and presence of Angels, and Archangels: and moreouer the sight of our Sauiour Christ, as it is conteined in that saying, whiles we are straungers from the bodie, we are at home with God. And the soules of the vnrighteous on the other side, are carried to Hell, as it said of Nabuchodonozor the king of *Babylon*: Hell is troubled vnder thee, being readie to méete thée, &c. And so till the day of resurrection and reward, are they reserued in such places as are méetest for them.

Saint Hillarie in the ende of his exposition of the second Psalme, writeth: that mens soules are straightway after death, made partakers of rewards or punishments. Hillarie.

And touching the soules of the old Patriarkes, that died before the natiuitie of Christ, Austin, Hierom, Nazianzen, and other holy Fathers teache, that God in certaine places by him chosen out for that purpose, hath preserued the soules of al those that are departed from this life in the true faith of the Messias to come, in such sort that they feele no griefe, but yet are depriued of the sight of God. This place they call Abrahams bosome, and Hell (for Hell doth not alwaies betoken a place of torment, but also generally the state that soules are in after this life.) And that our Lord Iesus Christ did visit and release them, and when he ascended, carried them with himselfe into heauen. Albeit certain of the Fathers, as Ireneus, Tertullian, Hilarie, & others, think that they shall at the last day ascend to heauen. Some also there be of our time which maintaine this fonde opinion, that the soules sleep, until the day of the last iudgement, in which they shall be again coupled with their bodies: but this assertion hath no ground in holy scripture, of the which point diuers haue entreated. But especially Iohn Caluin, that worthie seruant of God, in a proper Treatise that he Dormitantiũ. Caluin.

wrote of the same matter, in which he doth learnedly confute their reasons that maintein the contrary opinion.

Wherefore sith holy scriptures, as the Fathers vnderstand and interpret them, teache that the soules of men, as sone as they departe from the bodies, do ascende vp into heauen if they were godly, descende into hell if they were wicked and faithlesse, and that their is no thirde place in which soules should be deliuered, as it were out of prison, & that soules can neither be reclaimed out of heauen or hel. Hereby it is made euident, that they cannot wander on the earth, and desire aide of men. For first the soules of the blessed néed no aid or help that men cã giue them: & on the other side, the damned sort can no way be relieued: the which S. Ciprian the martir in his oration against Demetrian, doth plainly witnesse in these words: When we be once departed out of this world, there is afterward no place left for repentance, no way to make satisfactiõ: here life is either won or lost, & so forth. Albeit the testimonies alredy alleged on this point of doctrine, may well suffise those that loue the truth, and are desirous to come to the knowledge therof: yet to increase the number, I wil recite other testimonies also out of ỹ fathers, to proue manifestly, ỹ the soules departed, do not againe return, & wander on the earth, so that all they which haue not yet stopped their eares that the truth might not pierce & enter into them, may euidently perceiue, that those anciẽt times taught a far better doctrine of those spirits and ghosts, than other latter times vnder poperie haue cõmended and allowed. Tertullian a very auncient writer, in the end of his booke De anima, saith, the soules do not any longer abide on the earth, after they be once losed from their bodies: & that neither by their diuine accord, nor other mens cõmandement, they do wander at all after they haue descended into hell, but he saith, that euil spirits do vse this kinde of deceyt, to faine themselues to be the soules of suche as are deceased. And that hell is not open to any soule, that

Ciprian mar.

Soules do not walke.

Tertullian.

that it should afterward at any time depart thence, Christ our Lorde in the parable of the poore man that was in rest, and the rich glutton that was in torment, doth plainely ratifie vnder the person of Abraham, that there can be no man sent backe to shewe or tel ought of the state of hel. And albeit the fathers haue noted certaine errours and scapes in Tertullian, yet there was neuer any that reproued him for this opinion. Athanasius in his booke of questions, the xiii. Athanasius.
questiõ, doth giue a reason wherfore God will not suffer that any soule deceased, shuld returne vnto vs, and declare what the state of things is in hel, and what great misery is there: hereby (saith he) many errors wold easily spring vp among vs: for many diuels might so take on thẽ the shape of men, and be transformed into ỹ likenesse of the dead, and say, that they arose frõ the dead, and so publish many lying tales, and false opinions of things there don, therby to seduce and hurt vs. Weigh these wordes of Athanasius, I pray thee.

Saint Chrysostome in his nynetenth Homilie on the Chrisostome.
eight chapter of saint Matthewes Gospell, hath in maner the same wordes, for hee moueth this question: Why suche as were possessed with Spirites, liued in graues? Therefore (sayeth he) they abode there, to put this false opinion in mens heads, that those persons soules whiche by violent death departed, were turned into Diuels, and so did seruice vnto witches and soothsayers. The which opinion the diuell first brought in, thereby to diminishe the Martyrs prayse and glorie, that so the Sorcerers might slea those persons, whose wicked trauell and help they vsed, and those matters, saith he, are far from truth. For he proueth by the Scripture, that the spirits of the godly are not vnder the power of the Diuels, nor yet do stray abroade after death: then that they wouldo returne vnto their owne bodies, if they might wander whether they lusted. And further if they didde any seruice to their Murtherers, by that meanes they should at their handes

receiue

receiue a reward for an ill deed and displeasure. By naturall reason also it cannot come to passe, that a mans bodie should be turned into an other bodie, and therefore also the spirit of a man cannot be changed into a diuel.

But among other things which properly belong to our purpose, he saith: If we heare a noyse that saith, I am such a soule, we must thus thinke, that this talke proceedeth of some sleight and subtiltie of the diuel, and that it is not the soule of the dead bodie that speaketh these things, but the diuell that deuiseth them to deceiue the hearers. And by and by he saith, that these are to be counted old wiues words, or rather doting soules toyes to mocke children withall. For the soule when it is parted from the bodie cannot walke any longer in these parties. For the soules of the iust are in the hands of God. And on the other side, the soules of the wicked after their departure hence, are straightway ledde aside and withdrawne from vs, which may euidently be seene by Lazarus and the rich man. And in another place also the Lord saith! This day will they take thy soule from thee, wherefore the soule cannot heere wander when it is departed from the bodie.

A little afterward he addeth, that it may be proued out of many places of scripture, that the soules of the iust do not here wander after death. For Steuen said, Lord receiue my spirit, and Paule desired to be loosed and to depart hence, and to be with Christ.

Also the scripture, as touching the Patriarks death, vseth this phrase, he is laide vnto his fathers, growne vp vnto a good olde age. And that the soules of sinners and wicked men, cannot after their departure, here abide any longer, we may learne by the riche mans words, if we will weigh and consider with our selues what he demanded and could not obtaine. For if after death mens soules might any longer haue their conuersation heere on earth, no doubt the riche man himselfe would haue returned as his desire

was

was, and certified his friendes of hell torments. But of which place of scripture it is most cleare, that soules immediatly vpon their departure from their body, are carried vnto a certaine place, whence they cannot of themselues returne, but néedes must waite there for that terrible day of iudgement.

Also in his second Homily of Lazarus, amõg other things, he saith; It is most plaine, not only by that we haue before rehearsed, but also by this parable, that soules parted from the bodie, haue their abiding here no longer, but are forthwith lead away. For it came to passe (saith he) that he died, and was carried away by the Angels. And not onely the soules of the iust, but of the vniust and wicked, are hence led away, and carried to their proper places, which doth euidently appeare, by another rich man, of which mention is made in the 12. of Luke, to whom the Lord said: Thou fole this night will they take thy soule from thée.

And in his fourth Homily of Lazarus, he plainly teacheth, that we should giue more credite to holy scripture, than to one that came from the dead, or an Angell from Heauen. Herewithall he also sheweth, that the dead do not only make no appearance vnto men liuing, but yeldeth reasons wherefore they do not returne hither, in these words. If God had knowne that the dead being raised might haue profited the liuing, he would neuer haue let passe so great a benefit, who otherwise doth giue and prouide vs al things profitable.

Furthermore he addeth, that if it were requisite still to raise vp dead men, to make relation vnto vs of such things as there are done, this no doubt in continuaunce of time would haue bene neglected: and so the Diuell very easily would haue broached and brought in damnable opinions into the world. For he might often haue made counterfeit sightes, or suborne suche as should faine their selues to be dead and buried, and by and by to present themselues before

men, as if they had bin in déede raiſed from death, and by ſuche manner of perſons might ſo haue bewitched ſimple ſoules, that they would beléeue whatſoeuer he would haue. For if now when there is indéed no ſuch thing, the vaine dreames as it were of men deceaſed, that haue bin ſhewed to men in ſléepe, haue deceiued, peruerted & diſtroied many: ſurely much ſoner would th ſame haue fallen out, if it had bin a thing truly done, & this opinion had preuailed in mens heads. For if many dead perſons had retourned backe again into this life, the wicked ſpirit the diuell would eaſily haue deuiſed many ſleights and wiles, and brought in much deceit into the life of man. And therfore God hath clean ſhut vp this doore of deceit, and not permitted any dead man to returne hither & ſhew what things be don in ẏ other life, leaſt the diuel might grédily catch this occaſiõ to plant his fraudulent policies. For when the prophets were, he raiſed vp falſe prophets: when the Apoſtles were, he ſtirred vp falſe Apoſtles: and when Chriſt apeared in fleſh, he ſent thither falſe Chriſts or antechriſts: And when ſincere & ſound doctrine was taught, he brought into the world corrupt & damnable opiniõs, ſowing tares wherſoeuer he came. And therfore although it had come to paſſe, ẏ dead mẽ ſhold return again, yet would he haue counterfeited ẏ ſame alſo by his inſtruments, by ſome fained raiſing of the dead through the blinding and bewitching of mens eyes: or otherwiſe by ſubborning of ſome which ſhould feine themſelues to be dead (as I ſaid before) he would haue turned all things topſiturui e and vtterly haue confounded them. But God who knoweth all things, hath ſtopped his way, that he ſhould not thus deceiue vs, and of his great mercie towards vs, hath not permitted that at any time any ſhuld return from thẽce and tel vnto mẽ liuing, ſuch things as there are don, hereby to inſtruct vs that we ſhould be of this opinion & iudgment, that the ſcriptures ought to be beleeued before other things whatſoeuer, becauſe that God in them hath moſt clearly

taught

taught vs the doctrine of the last resurrection. Further, by them he hath conuerted the whole world, banished error, brought in truth, and compassed all these things by vile and base fishers, and finally in them hath giuen vs euery where plentifull arguments of his diuine prouidence, &c.

S. Cyril in his 11. booke & 36. cha. vpon S. Iohns gospell saith: We ought to beleeue, that when ỹ soules of holy men are gone away from the bodies, they are commended vnto the goodnesse of God, as into the handes of a most deare father, and ỹ they do not abide in ỹ earth, as some of the Heathens beleeued, vntill such time as they abhorred their graues: neither that they are carried as the soules of wicked men, vnto a place of exceeding torment, which is hel, Christ hauing first prepared this iourney for vs, but that they rather mount vp aloft into their heauenly fathers hands, &c. Cyrillus.

And in the Popes canon law, *Causa 13 quæst. 2. Fatendum*, we read, that many do beleeue that some come from ỹ dead to the liuing: euen as on the other side holy Scripture doth witnesse that Paule was caught vp from the liuing into Paradice. Vpon these words the glose saith, that some do indeed so beleeue, but falsly, sith they be but fansies and vain imaginations, as it is in *Causa. 26. quæstione. 5. Episcopi.* The Glosse of the canó law. *Deut.* 18.

What farther may bee saide to those men that knowe these things, and neuertheless do beleeue that soules straie on the earth, I know not: and yet that I may laie out all thinges plainly, I will heere confute their chiefest arguments.

CHAP. VI.

A confutation of those mennes arguments or reasons, which affirme, that dead mens soules doo appeare: And first that is aunswered whiche certaine doo alleage, to witte, that God is omnipotent, and therfore that he can worke contrary to the ordinary course of nature.

FIrst our aduersaries do laie against vs, that by the vsuall and common course of things, the soules of the godly abide in heauen, and the soules of the wicked in hell, vntill the last day, and do not walke at all: but yet that God may dispence with them to appear here sometimes, therby to instruct and admonish vs: And then Samuel did appeare after his death vnto king Saule, and Moses also which forsoke this life many yeres before: Likewise Elias, who was taken vp into heauen in a firie charet, appeared vnto Christ our sauior & his three disciples, whom he toke with him at his transfiguration in the mount. Lazarus also of *Bethanie*, returned from death into ẏ earth, and many other also were raised from death by Christ, his Apostles, and Prophets.

Farther they alledge this, ẏ Christs Apostles beleeued, that ẏ spirit or soule either of Christ, (as som of the fathers vnderstand it) or of som other person did appear vnto them. Besides to proue this matter, they alledge places out of the fathers, decrees of councels, & the common report ẏ hath bin bruted of those ẏ returned frō the dead. To al these reasons by Gods assistance, we will briefly and orderly answere.

The soules do returne to instruct men contrary to the common course of nature, by the omnipotent power of god.

As touching ẏ first obiection, ẏ al things are possible vnto God, we deny it not. We graunt then, that God can bring soules out of heauen or hel, and vse their trauell & seruice to instruct, comfort, admonish, & rebuke men. But for ẏ no text or example is found in holy scripture, that euer any soule came from ẏ dead, which did so schole & warn men: or ẏ the faithfull learned or sought to vnderstand any thing of the soules deceased, we cannot allow ẏ sequele of their reason. We may not of Gods almightie power inferre conclusions to our plesure. For this is a principle holdē in schooles, ẏ the reason doth not truly folow, ẏ is set from ẏ power of doing, to the deed done. For God doth nothing against himself, or his word written, to warrāt their reson: they shuld first haue proued, that it was gods wil, ẏ soules shuld return into the erth: for so do holy fathers intreat of gods almightie power.

Tertul-

Tertullian against Praxias saith: Truly I neuer thought that any thing was hard to bee done of God, we may faine of God what we list, as if he had done the same, because he is able to do it. But we must not beléeue that God hath therefore done all things, because he is able to do them. But first wee ought to make enquirie whether hee hath done them. How we oght to reason of the omnipotent power of God.

S. Ambrose in his first booke of epistles, and 37. epistle, writeth vnto Cromatius in this wise: Therefore what is there vnpossible vnto him? Not that thing which is harde to his power, but that which is contrary to his nature. It is vnpossible for him to lye, and this impossibilitie in him, procéedeth not of infirmitie, but of vertue and maiestie. For truth receiueth no lye, neither doth the vertue of God entertaine the vanitie of errour. Reade farther that which followeth in the same place. Ambrose.

Hierome writing to Eustochia, of the preseruing of her virginitie, saith: I will boldly auouch this one thing, that though God can do all things, yet can he not restore a virgin after her fall. Hierome.

Augustine in the tenth chapter of his fifth booke *De ciuitate dei* hath: That God is sayd to be omnipotent in doing that he will, and not in doing that he will not. Againe he addeth: Gods power is not hereby any whit diminished, when we say, that God cannot die or be deceiued. And immediately, therefore he cannot do some things because he is omnipotent, &c. Augustine.

Theodoret also teacheth vs, that it may not absolutely without exception be pronounced, that all things are possible vnto God. For who so doth precisely affirme this, doth in effect say this much, that all things both good and bad are possible vnto God, &c. Wherefore féeble is that obiection of theirs: God can sende soules vnto men, to teache and admonish them: therefore these spirites that praye ryde, bee soules that come out of Heauen or Hell. Theodoret.

In the meane time we do not denie the power of God, as ſome do maliciouſly report of vs: but we wold not haue the ſame made a denne or couert of errors.

VVee muſt learn nothing of the dead. *Deut.* 18.

Heare what the Lorde our God in the 18. of Deuteronomie ſpeaketh: When thou ſhalt come into the lande whiche the Lorde thy God giueth thée, do not thou learne to do after their abhominable rites, and vſages of thoſe nations. Let none bee founde among you, that maketh his ſonne or his daughter to paſſe through the fire: nor a diuiner that doth foreſhew things to come, nor a ſorcerer, nor a witche, nor a charmer, nor one that conſulteth with ſpirits, nor an inchanter, nor a Magitian, nor one that raiſeth vp the dead. For the Lorde doeth abhorre all that do ſuch things: and becauſe of theſe abhominations, the Lord thy God hath caſt them out before thée. Be thou therfore ſound and perfect before the Lord thy God: and by and by he promiſeth to ſend them that great Prophet whom they ſhould heare.

Eſay. 8. In the 8. of Eſay, it is written: If they ſay vnto you, enquire of them which haue a ſpirite of diuination, which whiſper and murmure ſoftely in youre eares to deceiue you. Should not euery people or nation enquire at their God? what ſhall they go from the liuing to the dead? Let them goe vnto the lawes teſtimonie, ſuche as haue no light, ſhould they not ſpeake according to this word, which who ſo ſhould contemne, ſhall be hardened and hunger, &c. Hereby we do vnderſtand, that vnder a great penaltie God hath preciſely forbidden, that we ſhoulde learne and ſearche out any thing of the dead. He alone woulde be taken for our ſufficient ſchoolemaiſter. In the Goſpell we

Luke. 22. read: They haue Moſes and the Prophets, let them heare them. Vnto theſe may be added teſtimonies out of the Apoſtles writings, that God doth not ſend vs ſoules hither to informe vs. The common and ordinarie way whereby it pleaſeth God to deale with vs, is his word. Therwithall

ſhould

should we content our selues, and not wait for new reuelations, or receiue any thing that doth not in all points agrée therewith. But as touching this matter, we wil speak more in his proper place.

CHAP. VII.

That the true Samuell did not appeare to the Witch in Endor.

NOw touching ỹ examples by them commonly alleaged, which do think that the souls of ỹ dead do return again vnto the liuing vpõ the earth: I wil first intreat of Samuels apparition, of which matter now adaies there is great contentiõ and reasoning. And (as I trust) I shall proue by strong arguments, that very Samuell himselfe did not appeare in soule and bodie, neither that his bodie was raised vp by the sorcerers, which perchance then was rotten & consumed vnto dust in the earth, neither ỹ his soule was called vp, but rather some diuellish spirit. First the author of the two bookes of Samuel, saith: that Saule did aske counsell of the Lord, and that he would not answere him, neither by Visions, nor by Vrim, nor by his Prophets. Wherefore if God disdained by his Prophets yet liuing, and other ordinary wayes to giue answer vnto him, whom he had alreadie reiected, we may easily coniecture, that he would much lesse haue raised a dead Prophet to make him answere. And the rather, for that as we haue a little before said, the lawe of God hath seuerely by a great threatening, forbidden to learne ought of the dead, and would not haue vs to searche for the trueth of them, nor that any man vse diuination by Spirites, and suche other diuellishe Artes. Secondly, if verie Samuell indæde appeared, that muste of necessitie haue come to passe, either by the

will.

will of God, or by the worke of arte Magike. But Gods will was not that Samuel should retourne. For he hath condemned Necromancie, and would not haue vs to aske counsel at the dead: and that the spirit of God did that which was contrary herevnto, or did permit the Saints to do it, or was present with them that did ought contrary thereto, it may not be graunted. And that those things were done by the force and operation of Art Magike, wee can not affirme. For the wicked spirit hath no rule or power ouer the soules of the faithfull to bring them out of their places when he lust, sith they be in the hand of God, and the bosome of Abraham, nay (which is lesse) he hath no power ouer filthy and vncleane swine, for he was driuen (as we
Matth.8. reade in the viii. chapter of Mathew) to beg leaue, before he could enter into the heard of swine: and how then should he haue any power ouer the soule of man? yet can it not be denied, that God sometimes for certain causes doth giue the Diuell and his seruants, Magitians & Necromancers, power to do many things, as to hurt and lame man and beast, and to worke other straunge things. But that God doth giue the Diuell leaue to raise dead bodies, or to call, bring forth, or driue away soules especially out of Heauen, it hath no grounde at all in Scripture, neither can there be any reasonable cause alledged, wherefore God would or should giue the Diuell licence to do these things contrary to the vsuall and common order, yea and againe his owne expresse commaundement. For vayne and childishe is the cause heereof that is giuen of some men, that Samuell shoulde appeare to terrifie and astonishe Saule: as if God coulde not haue feared him by other waies and meanes. Was he not before vtterly abashed and dismayed? Thirdly, if Samuell were brought backe, the same was done either by his will and consent, or without the same, but that he did freely and of his owne accord obey the sorcerers, no man I thinke is so blinde to imagine.

For

For that were vtterly repugnant to the Lawe of God, that hee shoulde confirme Witchcraft and Sorcerie by his example. If the Witch had called for Samuell, whilest he liued, doubtlesse he would not haue approached vnto him. And how then can we beléeue that he came to him after his death? We may not so say, that the Witch compelled him to resort to him against his will: for the Diuel hath no power ouer the soules of the godly, and Magike of it selfe is of no force. Heathenish superstition no doubt it is, that wordes vttered by Magitians, after their peculiar manner, or figures drawne, should haue suche a secret and hidden operation. For the Heathens beléeued that they could with a certain set stile & number of words, bring and draw downe Iupiter out of Heauen. Wherfore they termed him Iupiter Elicius. There are also certaine superstitious persons in these our daies, which go about to cure diseases by certaine rites of blessings, and by conjurings. Some hang aboute their neckes certaine scrolles of Paper, in which ther are written diuers strange words, but whether wordes of themselues haue any force at all, reade Plinie in his 28. booke, and 2. chapter, and Cælius Rhodiginus in his 16. booke and 16. chapter of Antiquities.

Wordes of thē selues haue no force.

Iupiter Elicius.

Plinie.

Fourthely, if very Samuel himselfe had appeared, hée would not haue bene worshipped of Saule. For we reade in the 19. and 22. chapter of the Reuelation, that Iohn would haue worshipped the angell, whiche had opened vnto him great misteries, but the Angell of God forbad him so to do. Some héere aunswere, that Saule ment not to giue vnto the Prophet, the honor that was due vnto God, but onely a certeine outward and euill worship, such as we are wont to yéelde vnto honest men, and suche as haue well deserued of the Churche and common weale. For they say, that the Hebrue word Schachah there vsed, doth signifie to bend the knée, and to fall downe at a mans féete: which kinde of worship we reade, that Abigael and

Apoc. 19. 22.

Nathan the Prophet gaue vnto King Dauid. And Paule
Rom. 12. also in the 12. Chapter of his Epistle to the Romanes teacheth, that we should honour one another. Thomas of Aquine intreating of those two places that I euen nowe recited out of the Reuelation, saieth, that Iohn ment not to worship the Angell, with the worship properly called Latria, but with an other kind of worship termed Dulia, that is to say, that Iohns will was not to withdrawe from God, the honor due vnto him, but to worship the Angell that was sent from God, only with a ciuill and outward homage: and yet the Angell would not so far condiscend vn-
Actes. 12. to him. In the new Testament the 10. chap. of the Acts of the Apostles, we read that Cornelius met with Peter, fell downe at his feet and worshipped him, yet, so as he had bene an embassadour from God and not God himselfe, and yet Peter lifted him vp & said, Arise for I my selfe am a man also. He said not to Cornelius thou doest well herein: nor as his worthie Vicare (with a mischiefe) is wont to do, proffered his foote vnto him to kisse. We may read also that Elias disciples worshipped Elizeus that succeeded into his office, to which place the word to bowe the knee, or fall downe, is vsed. But whether the Prophet did except and allowe this kind of reuerence or no, there is no expresse mention. Briefly, it is not likely that the Prophet would haue suffered the King to fall downe at his feete.

Fiftly, if he had bin the true *Samuel*, he would no doubt haue exhorted *Saule* to repentance, and willed him to wait for aide from God, to put his whole confidence in him, or at least way, to haue giuen him some comforte, or counselled him to fight againste his enimies with more courage. For though the Prophets do often chide and threaten men, yet do they againe reuiue and solace them. Now because this *Samuel* doth beate no other thing into his heade, but that God was displeased with him, and had alredy forsaken him, we may not beleeue that he was the true, but a meere

Testimonies out of the Fathers touching

counter-

counterfeit Samuel. Sirtly, the auncient Fathers write, that the true Samuel was not seene. Samuels appearing.

Tertullian in his booke *De anima* saith, that the Diuill did there represent Samuels soule, God forbid (saith he) that we should beleeue that the diuel can draw we the soule of any Saint, much lesse a Prophet, out of his proper place, sith we are taught that Sathan doth transfourme himselfe into an Angel of light, and much soner into a man of light: who also will auouch himselfe to be God, and do notable signes and wonders to seduce, if it were possible, the very elect. S. Augustine is not alwaies of one iudgement touching this apparition: in his second booke to Simplician Bishop of *Millaine*, and the third question thereof, hee graunteth that by the dispensation of Gods will, it might so come to passe, that the spirite of some holy Prophet, should consent to present it selfe in the sight of the King, to come out of his owne place, and to speak with him, but not to do this by constrainte, or by the vertue of Arte Magike, which might haue any power ouer it: but thereby to shew it selfe obedient to the secret dispensation of God: and yet he doth not dissemble, that a better answer may be giuen, to witte, that the spirite of Samuel was not truly and indeed raised vp from his rest, but rather some vain vision and counterfeit illusion, that should be brought to passe by the diuels practise, which the Scripture therefore doth tearme by the name of Samuel, because the same is wont to call the images and similitudes of things, by the names of the things themselues. For who is he (saith Augustine) that will be afraid to call a man painted, a man, considering that without staggering, we are accustomed to giue eache thing his proper name, assoone as we behold the picture of the same: as when we take the viewe of a painted table, or wall, we say straightway, this is Tullie, this is Salust, hee Achilles, that other Hector, this is the floud called *Symois*, that place tearmed *Rome*, whereof these Tertullian. Augustine.

things be indéede no other than painted Images, of those things whose names they beare. Sith this is so, he saith, it is not to be maruelled that scripture saith Samuel was seen, when perchance Samuels image seemed to appeare, through the craftie pollicie of him, that transformed himselfe into an Angell of light, and fashioneth his ministers like vnto the Ministers of righteousnesse.

In his booke *De octo Dulcitij quæstionibus*, the 6. question therof, he vttereth all this in as many words, & in his booke *De cura pro mortuis gerenda*, he writeth that some are sent, from the deade to the liuing: as on the other side, Paule was rapt vp from the liuing vnto Paradice: hée addeth there the example of Samuel being dead, which did foreshewe to Saule, things, that afterwardes should come to passe. He saith further, that this place may otherwise be vnderstanded, and that certaine faithfull men haue bene of this iudgement, that it was not Samuel, but that some spirit fit for such wicked practises, had taken vpon him his shape and similitude. And in other places, as we will shew hereafter, he affirmeth, that there is a figure conteined in those wordes, because the name of the thing is giuen vnto the Image that doth but represent the same: and that it was not Samuel that appeared, but some diuelish spirit.

Other Fathers of the Churche haue written nothing particularly of this storie, so far as I know, but in certaine places of their workes, they teache generally that good spirites are not pulled backe into the earth by Magicall Art. Of Iustine and Gregorie I will speake anone. In the very Papall decrées, 26. question 5. chapter, *Nec mirum*, it is written that it was not Samuel, but rather some wicked spirite that appeared to Saule: And that it were a great offence that a man should beléeue the plaine words of the storie without some farther meaning, for how saith he could it come to passe, that a man from his byrth holie

The Popes decrees.

and

and iust in conuersation of life, should by Art Magicke be pulled out of his place? And if he were not so drawne against his will, then he must néedes agrée thereto: both whiche are like absurde, to bee imagined of a iust man. This is the Diuels legerdimaine, to make shewe, as though he had power ouer good men, thereby the rather to deceiue many. He there farther addeth, that the Historiographers do set forth both Saules minde, and Samuels state, and also those things which were sayd and séene, omitting this, whether they were true or false. And other words followe, whiche who so list to sée more of that matter, may there reade.

But here Nicolas Lyras iudgement (which in his Commentaries on the bookes of the Kings, mainteineth the contrary opinion) should bee little weighed and regarded of vs. Where he noteth, that the place by vs euen now alleaged, is not written according to the censure of the Church, though it be found in the Popes lawe, for otherwise saith he, they which ensued in latter times, wold not haue written contrary to ỹ same, for many of those things concerning which men haue written otherwise in latter times, were neuertheless set forth to the world, to be beleeued, as the very erpresse and sound iudgement of the whole Christian Church, because they were put in the Popes booke of Decretalls. Lyra.

CHAP. VIII.

A Confutation of their arguments, which would haue Samuel himselfe to appeare.

WE will now come to the Confutatiõ of their Arguments, which maintaine, that very Samuel himselfe appeared to the Sorcerers, for he that rightly ouerthroweth his aduersaries arguments, is supposed by the same meanes to confirme his owne cause. The chéefest

arguments which our aduersaries vse, is taken out of the
Eccle.46. 46. chapter of Ecclesiasticus, where these words are found. Samuel before his death made protestation before God, and before his annointed, that he toke from no man his substance, no not so much as the value of a shoe, and no man could then reproue him. And after his death he prophesied, and tolde the King of his ende. From the earth he lift vp his voyce, and shewed that the wickednesse of the people should perish.

This place somewhat troubled S. Augustine, and other godly Fathers. For if the Diuell onely appeared, and not Samuel, howe is it there saide that he slept, that is, died, for the Diuel neyther sleepeth nor dieth. Hereunto I may shape this answere, that this booke is not to be nombred among the Canonicall bookes of the olde Testament, and that Doctrine in controuersies, cannot bee proued by the authoritie thereof, the whiche Saint Augustine, also confesseth in his booke *De cura pro mortuis agenda.*

But howsoeuer that be credited as true or false, I answere them plainly, that Iesus the Sonne of Syraches intent was, to alleage the Storie literally, as the wordes lye, and not by reason to debate the matter, whether Samuel truly appeared or no. Hee speaketh there according to the opinion of Saule and the Witche, which thought that Samuel himselfe was raised. Further they say, that hee which appeared vnto Saule, is sometimes expressly and in plaine words called Samuel. And an vnseemely matter it were, making much for the reproach of so great a Prophet, if his name had bene applied vnto the Diuel. If say they, it had not bene Samuel, but some wicked spirite, the scripture would in some one word or other, haue noted the same.

To

To this Argument first I aunswere, that euen in our common spæche, it is an vsuall phrase by the figure *Metonymia*, to terme the Image by the name of the thing, that it presenteth. So we terme the Armes and Enligne of a Noble man, by the name of that Lord himselfe, that giueth those Armes. We say, this is Iulius Cæsar, Nero, Saint Peter, Saint Paule, or here thou maist sée the Cities of *Tigurine*, and *Argentorat*, also the Duke of *Saringe*, whereas indéed they are only their counterfeits, or Armes, and signes of honour.

In a Comedie or Tragedie, we call this man Saule, that Samuel, an other Dauid, whereas they do but betoken and represent their personages. So saith Virgil, in his first booke of Æneidos: They wonder at Æneas gifts, and haue Iulius in admiration. And yet was it not Iulius or Ascanius, but Cupid feining himselfe to be Iulius, whereby he might the easiler pearce the heart of the ignorant Dueene, with his dart of Loue.

Sainte Augustine in his seconde Booke and ninthe chap. *De mirabilibus scripturæ* saieth, that holie Scripture doeth sometimes applie the verie names of thinges to the Images and similitudes of the same. Hée alleageth there this example, that the foule spirit is called Samuel, because hée did falsely beare Saule in hande, that hée was *S*amuell: whiche fraude of the Diuell, coulde no waies turne to Samuels reproach. For who would say, that it should be a reproach for an honest man, if some knaue would terme himselfe by his name, as if he were he himselfe.

The false prophets sayde, they were true Prophets, and Gods seruauntes, yea (which is more) they feined themselues to be the verie Messias, the Sonne of God. And that Scripture doth not so muche as in one word make mention, that this was verie Samuell in dæde,

but

but rather some spirite, we must thinke that it so came to passe, for this cause, that all men by the Lawe of God might vnderstand, that Magike and enquirie of things at the dead, did much displease God. Saule himselfe before by the counsell and motion of Samuel, slewe all the Magitians that he could any where finde. And God is not accustomed in this wise to interprete Figuratiue spéeches: for many of them are some descried by such as giue diligent héed to them. A vaine and superfluous spéech it were, if a man woulde say that is Peter, this is the Image of Peter, whiche by a Figure, is called by the name of Peter.

Furthermore, holie Scripture doth vse to speake of things, rather according to the opinion and iudgement of men, than according to the substaunce and true béeing which they haue indéede. So Iesus is called the Sonne of Ioseph, and Iosephe named his father, whereas notwithstanding, our Sauiour Christ Iesus, was borne of a chaste and vnspotted Virgine, without any helpe of man. And yet neuertheless many of the Iewes, imagined, that he was the Sonne of Ioseph. In the 1. Cor. 1. the Gospel it selfe is named foolishnesse, because that men did account the great wisedome of God but as méere foolishnesse. So in the first Epistle to the Corinthians, and tenth chapter, the scripture tearmeth them gods, which be nothing lesse than so indéed. And that for this cause onely, for that the Heathen tooke them for gods, and so did worship them. Euen so the scripture doeth tearme the Diuell Samuel, because Saule thought him to be Samuel in very déed.

1. Cor. 1.

1. Cor. 10.

Iere. 10.
Psal. 96.

An other reason they vse, that Samuel foreshewed vnto Saule suche thinges as afterwardes should come to passe: as that the Philistians should in battayle ouerthrowe his Armie, and he and his sonnes togither be slaine. And all these thinges came to passe according to his Prophesie. And say they, the Diuel knoweth not, neither can he fore-

VVhether the diuel forknow of thinges to come.

tell

tell of things to come, sith it is onely in Gods power so to do: But as Christ in the eight of Iohn saith, he is a lyar, and the father of lies. Hereunto a man may easily answere: The Diuell knewe howe things stode with the Iewes, and the Philistines, he vnderstood euen the very secret consultations, priuie practises, and warlike preparation on both sides. He sawe that the Israelites were slenderly addressed vnto battaile, and vtterly daunted of courage. Besides this, Samuel had a little before threatned Saule with Gods heauie wrath and vengeance, and that Dauid should be aduaunced to the kingly throne, whereby he might easily gather what would ensue, and that Saule must nedes giue place to Dauid. And if the euent had bene otherwise, yet he knew that Saule with this prophesie would be quite dismaied, and driuen to dispaire: which thing must nedes well content and please Sathan, who laieth his baites day and night to intrappe men. *Iohn 8.*

The Diuell doth not presently vnderstand things to come, and therefore he giueth doubtfull answeres to such as seke oracles of him: As when he said,

Croesus perdet Halin transgressus plurima regna.

That is, Cresus passing ouer the riuer, Halis shall ouerturne many kingdomes. And yet oftentimes he gathereth one thing no otherwise than by an other. Hereof writeth Augustine in the 26. 27. 28. Chapters of his Booke *De Anima*. The Diuel is one which hath bene long beaten in experience, the which thing in all affaires and matters is of very great force. For olde and practised souldiours do by and by foresee to what issue things will come, but yong men, and such as want experience, do not forthwith espie out the euent of each enterprise. Moreouer, the Diuels are very actiue, and can some dispatch their matters. The Marriners knowe when windes and storines will arise. Husbandmen also are not destitute of their prognostications. The skilfull Astronomer can many yeares before exactly

Which being doubtfully spoken, may be vnderstood either of subuerting other kingdomes, or loosing his owne.

actly foretell when there will happen an Eclipse of the Sunne and Moone. The Phisitian by the critical dayes, pulse, and vrine, can lightly iudge whether his patient shall liue or no: builders see before hand when an house will fall, and a practised souldioure can straightwayes iudge who shall winne the victorie. And what maruaile then may it be, if the Diuell an olde trained souldiour, can sometimes foreshew some certaine thing? Shall we be of this minde, that so many yeares experience hath brought them no knowledge at all? Other whiles he telleth things which be true indeed, and yet to no other end, but that he may thereby purchase a certaine credite vnto his lying, to seduce the ignorant.

For euen that counterfeit Samuell, made wise, as if he had taken it in very ill part, that Saule did so molest and disquiet him, and that he should be forced to talke with him: he vseth farther the words as it were of Samuel himselfe. And hereof it commeth, that many gather, he was the true Samuel indeede. But what doth not Sathan deuise to deceiue men, and to force them vnto desperation? Here I could alleage examples of suche as haue bin perswaded, that they sawe and heard this and that man, and moreouer knewe them perfectly by their speeche: whereas they haue afterwards had euident intelligence, that they were at that time many miles distant from them. So craftie is the Diuell, and knoweth how to worke these and many other feates.

There are farther, diuers places alleaged out of the auncient Fathers, that seeme to make for them, whiche affirme that true Samuell appeared vnto Saule. But these places we haue before for the moste parte answeared. For albeit Augustine in some places moue a doubte, whether it were the true Samuel or no, yet in certaine other places hee lyketh and beste alloweth their opinion, who denie Samuel to haue appeared at all,

all, taking rather that kinde of speech, for tropicall and figuratiue.

Iustine the Martir, who is one of the most auncient Fathers, reasoning against Trypho a Iewe, writeth in his *Colloquio*, that the couetous Sorceresse at Saules commaundement raysed vp *Samuels* soule. And no man shoulde maruaile hereat, sith that the selfesame Author doeth by and by adde, that he is of this iudgement, that all the soules of Prophettes and iust menne are subiect vnto suche power as a man may in verie deed beleeue, to haue bene on this greedie and subtile Witche. But this none of the Fathers will graunt him. Other Greeke writers also, whiche in their tender yeares applied their mindes to Philosophie, and not to the studie of holy Scriptures, and afterwardes were conuerted to Christianitie, do sette forthe in their writings certaine opinions which are not agreeable to the word of God. Wherefore it needs not seeme a straunge thing to any manne, that Iustine the Martire in some pointes had his errors. Iustinus.

The same Authour in *Responsionibus ad Orthodoxos*, question 52. maintaineth the contrary assertion. For, saith he, whatsoeuer things were done by that hungry Witche, were indeede the workes of the Diuell, who did so dazle the eyes of such as beheld him, that it seemed vnto them, they sawe Samuel himselfe, when in verie deede he was not there. But the truth of his words proceeded from God, who gaue the diuel power to appeare vnto the Sorceresse, and to declare vnto her, that which should afterwards come to passe. &c.

If any man obiect that this worke is not rightly ascribed vnto Iustine, (for so muche as hee doth make mention of Origen, and Ireneus the Martire, whereas notwithstanding hee him selfe was martyred before them. And farther, speaketh of the Manichees,

who were in their ruffe long after this time. Hereunto we answere, that if this booke were not written by Iustine, yet (as may appeare) some other learned Clarke wrote that worke, whose authoritie might carry away as great credit as Iustines, sith that the same doth fully agree with holie scripture. Furthermore we may set against Iustine, other holy Fathers, as Tertullian and Chrysostome, of whom we haue before spoken, who haue by holy scripture instructed vs, that it was not Samuell indæde whiche appeared vnto Saule. We will hereafter say somewhat of Gregorie, who no doubt was a learned and godly Father, but yet too simple and light of beléefe.

Gregorius.

And the Fathers themselues deny, that a man should subscribe vnto their opinion in ought that they do maintaine and auouche without the warrant of Gods word. The Popes out of Augustine written in their Decrées, Quest. 9. ca. Noli, that a man should credit none of the Fathers except he proued his saying out of holy Scriptures. But in these dayes many cull nothing out of their bookes but errours, and whatsoeuer they maintaine by good testimony of the holy scriptures, that they reiect and disanull: in which point they do fitly resemble those children, who only in things wicked and euil, imitate their good parents: for good men also haue their faultes.

CHAP. IX.

Whether the Diuell haue power to appeare vnder the shape of a faithfull man?

But thou doest demand whether the Diuell can represent the liknesse of some faithfull man deceased? Hereof we need not doubt at all. For in the 2. Cor. 11. S. Paul witnesseth, that sathan transformeth himselfe into the shape & fashion

2. Cor. 11.

of

of an Angell of light. Sathan by nature is a spirit, and is therefore tearmed an Angel, because God vseth to send him to bring that thing to passe which he thinketh best. So in the second of Kings. 22. Chapter, an euil angell was sent forth to Ahabs destruction, to be a lying spirit in the mouth of 400. false prophets. This was an angell of errour and darkenesse: who yet in outwarde shewe could resemble a good Angell, that he might so guide the counsell of Baalls worshippers, who no doubt vaunted themselues, as if they had bene gathered togither by Gods holy spirit. If sathan be then so skilfull, can he not counterfait and faine himselfe to be some holy man, by resembling his wordes, voyce, testure, and such other things?

2. *Reg.* 22.

Amongst the Gentiles he hath done miraculous Actes, perswading them to thinke, that soules by Arte Magicke were called vp, and compelled to giue answere of secrete and hidden things that were to come. And therefore not only in publike, but also priuate affaires, if they seemed to be any thing hard vnto them, they consulted with Magitians and Sorcerers, and had moreouer recourse sometimes vnto Oracles.

Tertullian in his booke *De Anima* mentioneth, that there were some euen in his dayes, which professed they could raise vp and reclaime soules from the hellishe habitation. And he calleth Arte Magike, the second Idolatrie, in the whiche the diuels do as well faigne themselues to bee dead men, as they do in the other to bee Gods. So do these subtle spirites lurke, and do many straunge things vnder the pretence of deade men. He addeth, that Magike is thought to conuey soules out of Hell which lye there in rest, and to represent them vnto our sighte, by reason that it sheweth a vaine vision, and counterfeiteth the shape of a bodie. Neither is it a harde matter for him to bleare and beguile the outward eyes, who can easily darken and dazell the inwarde sighte of the minde. The Serpents that

Tertullian.

were brought forth by the inchaunters rods, seemed to the *Egiptians* to be bodies, but the truth of Moises deuoured vp the Magitians lye. Simon also and Elimas the Magitians, did many signes and wonders against the Apostles &c. He addeth, that euen in his time those heretikes named properly Simonistes of Simon the Magitian, the first author of that sect, did with suche greate presumption aduaunce their arte, that they professed they coulde rayse from the dead, euen the soules of the Prophets &c.

Lactantius. Lactantius in the. 1. booke 17. chap. De origine erroris, writeth, that euill angels lurking vnder the names of the dead, did wound and hurt the liuing, that is, they toke vnto themselues the names of Iupiter and Iuno, whome the heathens toke to be gods, or as we now say, they toke vnto them the names of S. Sebastian, Barbara, and others.

Idem. In the 7. booke and 23. chap. he saith, that the Magitians with certaine inchauntmentes did call soules out of hell. But this may not so be vnderstood, that Lactantius was of this iudgement, that they by their wicked arts did bring the soules back again into their dead bodies: but that they did so vaunt and boast that they had raised vp this and that soule. He also confuteth the opinion of the Ethnikes, proouing by the testimonie of the very Magitians, whom they highly reuerenced, that the soule was immortall. These men affirmed and taught, that they did call vp soules from the dead, the which point, euen those of the Gentiles beleeued, who notwithstanding thought, that the soule did straightway die with the bodie.

Iustine the Martire, in the second Apologie which he wrote in the defence of Christians, hath these wordes: I will (saith he) say the truth: In times past wicked angels through vain visions deceiued women, and children, and with straunge and monstrous sightes made men afraide, by whiche meanes they often wrong that oute of foolishe and rude persons, which by reason they coulde neuer get

of them. And therefore not knowing that these were the Diuels engines and policies tending to delude them, they by one consent termed the workers of these slie conueyances, by the name of Gods, assigning to eache of them their proper names, as best pleased themselues. &c.

Afterwardes in the same Apologie hée exhorteth the Heathens, that they would not deny mens soules after this life to be endued with sense, but at the least way, would giue credit to their owne Necromancers, who teach that they call vp mens soules. Also let them beléeue those ỹ affirme they haue bin vexed with spirits of dead men, which persons the common people term furious & frantike bodies. In Augustin *De ciuitate dei*, many such things be cõteined.

Now what dreadfull, strange, and maruellous ceremonies they vsed when they went about by their Magicall Artes to call vp the soules of the dead, a man may sée in the sixth booke of Lucan the Poet: where he setteth forth how Erictho, a famous Witche in *Thessaly*, reuiued and restored a souldiour to life againe, who was lately slaine before. Which act he did at the request of *Sextus* Pompeius, that so he might by him learne what woulde be the issue of the battaile fought at *Pharsalia*.

This kind of Magike they properly terme Necromancie, or Phycomancie, which is wrought by raising vp the spirits and soules of the dead. Of which there were diuerse sorts. For sometime appeared vnto men the whole bodies of the dead, but at an other time onely ghostes and spirits: and often nothing was heard, sauing onely a certaine obscure voyce.

Plutarch in the life of Cimon, (as hée is translated by Ioachimus Camerarius, in the Preface on Plutarches bookes, *De oraculis quæ defecerint, & de conseruata figura, Ei in Delphis*) writeth, that Pausanias, when he had taken the Citie of *Bizance*, sent for Cleonice, a mayden of noble parentage, to haue vnhoneſt company with her.

Whom

vehom her parents partly by necessitie, and partly for fear, sent vnto him. But after that the virgin had once obteined so much of his waiters in his priuie Chamber, that they should at her first entrance, put out the lightes, she in the darke going softly towardes Pausanias bedde, by the way stumbled on the candlestricke, and ouerthrew it against her will, as he laie a sléepe in his bedde, who being troubled with the sodaine noyse, drew a sword that laie by him, and therewith slewe the virgine, as she had bene his enemie, which went prively to set vpon him. But she being thus slaine with that deadly stroake, would neuer suffer Pausanias to take his quiet rest, but in a vision appearing vnto him in the night season, denounced sentence of hatred against this noble captaine, in these words.

Στεῖχε δίκας ἀντὶ χρῆλα τὰ κακὰ εἰς ἐμὲ ἔθεσ.

which is,

Answere to the lawe, for wrong is an euill thing vnto all men. This heinous déede of Pausanias was verie grieuously taken of all his companions, who therefore vnder the conduction of captaine Cymo sette on him, and chased him out of *Thracia*. And thus hauing lost the Citie of *Bizance*, when (as it is reported) the fight continued in troubling him, he fledde vnto *Necyomantium*, at *Heraclea*, where the soule of Cleonices being called vp, hée by intreatie pacified her displeasure. Shée did there both present her selfe vnto his sight, and also told him, it should shortly come to passe, that the euill towardes him should cease, assoone as he came to *Sparta*. Whereby prively intimating his death, &c. This Pausanias did at the first soberly and discrétely demeane himselfe, but afterwardes béeing puffed vp with such victories as he had obteined, he ruled and raigned lyke a verie Tyraunt. Wherefore when the Magistrates called Ephori, would haue committed him to prison, he toke Sanctuarie in a Temple, where he was

Ephori amõgest the Lacedemonians were Magistrates, who in certaine cases were

shut

shut vp vntill he famished through hunger.

I might here heape togither many such like Historyes, to proue euidently what this Samuel was. In other matters also, if God licence him, the Diuel is not destitute of power, and how craftie and readie he is for all affaires, experience doth well declare.

Furthermore graunt that, wherin the pith and strength of the question doth consist (which can neuer be proued by scripture) that God did permit *Samuell* to returne and to prophesie of things to come after his death, yet will it not thereof follow, that such visions should now be shewed also, or that those things should be out of hand credited and done which they commaund.

God in times past, did often in visible shape send his Angels vnto men, but now we heare not that many are sent vnto men, neither indeed is the same necessary. When the Apostles liued here, many notable miracles were done, but now for certaine good causes, they cease and fall away, for whatsoeuer is necessary for our saluation, is expressly conteined in the word of God. These notes touching Samuels appearing, may suffise.

about kings, vnto whom appeales were made from kings: euen as amongst the Romans, they appealed from the Consuls to the Tribunes.

CHAP. X.

Moyses and Elias appeared in the Mounte vnto Christ our Lord: many haue bene raised from the dead both in bodie and soule, and therefore soules after they are departed, may returne on earth againe.

IN like manner they obiect vnto vs, out of the 17. of Matthew, that Moses and Helias were seene in the Mount, (which is called by the olde Writers *Tabor*,) with our Lord Iesus, by the Apostles whom he had chosen for the same purpose, and that they did speake with him. Luke telleth of what matters they com-

Mat. 17. Moses & Elias appeared.

communed with him, to wit of his death, that is ỳ death of the crosse. Thereupon they gather, that the soules of dead men may come againe into earth & appeare vnto men: we haue graunted before that God is able to send soules again into the earth, but that it is his will so to do, or that it is necessary especially at these dayes, is not yet proued. Moses and Helias appeared not to al the Apostles but only to three, neither did they speake to those three, they brought no new Doctrine, they commanded them not to build Churches in their honor, or to do any such like thing, whether that their soules came alone, or their bodies: also sure it is, they were not sent to the Apostles, but to Christ onely.

It was very necessary, that they which should be Christs witnesses, should very wel vnderstand, that both ỳ Law and the Prophets, do beare record vnto our Sauior Christ, that he should die for the world, and come again in the latter day, to raise vp the dead bodies, to glorifie them, & to carry them with him, into eternal blisse. And for this cause, God would haue these two excellent Prophets seene of the Apostles.

Lazarus came againe on earth. *Iohn* 11.

Lazarus soule did not only appeare, but he came againe both in bodie & soule, as Iohn witnesseth in his 11. chap. he is as it were a sure token, of our true resurrection, which shall be in the last day, as also others, which our Saviour Christ, the Apostles, and in auncient time, the Prophets haue raised from the dead. You shall neuer read that either Lazarus, or any other haue tolde where they were while they were dead, or what kind of being there is in the other world, for these things are not to be learned and knowne of the dead, but out of the word of God.

Matth. 27. At the resurrectiõ of christ many rose againe.

The like may be said to that which is in the 27. chap. of S. Matthew, that when Christ suffered on the Crosse, the graues were opened, & afterwards on the day of his resurrection, many dead bodies did arise, & appeared to many at *Hierusalem*. The soules of the dead did not only appeare, neither did they warne the liuing, or command them to do

this

this or that for ỹ deads sake, to wit, either to pray for them, or to go on pilgrimage to saints, &c. But ỹ dead with their soules and bodies togither, came into the earth: for hereby God would shewe, that he by his death hath ouercome and destroyed death to the faithfull, and that at the last day their soules and bodies shall be knit togither, and liue with God for euer. Now what these holy men were that rose againe, and whether they remained any time in this present life, or died againe, or went with Christ into heauen, loke the iudgement of S. Augustine in his 99. Epist. to Euodius, and his 3. booke *De mirabilibus. cap.* 13. Augustine.

To these we may ioyne that which Ruffinus writeth in his ecclesiasticall history, 1. booke, 5. chap. and which Socrates repeateth in his first booke & 12. chap. touching Spiridion Bishop of *Cyprus*. He had a daughter called Irene, with whome a certaine friend of hers left gorgious apparell, she being more wary than needed, hid it in the ground, and within a while died. Not long after cõmeth this man ỹ owed the apparel, & hearing say ỹ maiden was dead, goeth to her father whom sometimes he accuseth, & sometimes intreateth. The old father supposing this mans losse to be his owne calamitie, cõmeth to his daughters graue, & there calleth vpõ god, beseeching him ỹ he would shew him before ỹ time, the resurrection which is promised. And his hope was not in vaine, for the virgin being reuiued, apeared to her father, & shewed the place wher she had hid the apparel, & so departed again. Spiridion raised his daughter. Ruffinus.

I will not deny this thing to be true. For the like history hath Augustine in his 137. epist. A certain yong man which had an euill name accused Boniface, Augustines priest, ỹ he inticed him to filthinesse. Now whẽ ỹ matter could neither be proued, nor disproued by sufficient reasons: both of them were bid to go to the graue of one Felix a Martyr, that by a miracle the truth might be known. They had not bin sent, vnlesse before this time also some secrete matters had bene knowne by this meanes: it may be wel answered, that they were good, or rather euil angels which did appeare.

CHAP. XI.

Whether the holy Apostles thought they sawe a mans soule, when Christ sodeinly appeared vnto them after his Resurrection.

Luke 24. WE reade in the 24. Chapter of Saint Lukes Gospell, that two Disciples whiche returned from *Emaus* to *Hierusalem*, told the Apostles, that they had seene Christ aliue againe, and whiles they yet spake, the Lorde stood in the midst of them, and saide vnto them, Peace be vnto you: but they being amazed & afraid, thought they sawe a spirit. &c.

Christs Disciples supposed they sawe a ghost.

Out of this some go about to proue, that the Apostles beleeued that spirits or soules did walke and appeare vnto men, and that they themselues did thinke they sawe the spirit of Christ (as certaine of the old Writers do expound it) or else some other mans spirit.

This argument may be answered two wayes. First if they thought they sawe a soule, they thought a misse. But they were no lesse deceiued with the common sorte now, than when they thought Christ would raise vp an outward and earthly kingdome, in which they should be chiefe. Secondly, it may be, that they supposed they sawe an euill or good Angell, for there are more kindes of spirites than one. There is a spirit that created all things, to wit, God the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost. Againe there be spirits that be created, as good and euil Angels, as also the soules of men, which either are in the bodie, or by death seuered from the bodie, and abide either in euerlasting life, or in eternall damnation. As touching the state of soules in Purgatorie, where they are prepared to the heauenly iourney, and of *Lapsus purorum*, there is nothing extant in holy scripture.

Many kindes of spirites.

It is manifest in scripture, that God appeared vnto the holy Patriarches, to the Prophets, to Kings and others, in diuers visions and formes, and that he shewed himself vnto them and spake with them. Iacob sawe a ladder reache from the earth vp to heauen, and God leaning on it. Isaias sawe the Lord sitting vpon an high throne. Daniel sawe an olde man sitting, and his sonne comming vnto him and receiuing all power of him.

Tertullian and other holy Fathers do teach, that the sonne of God, which at the appointed time should take vpon him humaine flesh, did appear vnto the Patriarches in an angelicall shape.

When Iohn Baptist did baptise our Sauiour in *Iordan*, the holy Ghost was seene in the shape of a Doue. The holy scriptures in many places do testifie, that good Angels haue oftentimes appeared to Gods Ministers.

That euill spirits are often seene, and that at this day they shewe themselues in diuers formes, to Inchaunters and Conturers, and to other men also, as well godly as wicked, both by histories and daily experience doth witnesse.

Truly we reade not, that soules haue appeared on this fashion. By these we may easily gather, that the Apostles, when they thought they sawe a spirit, did not beleeue they sawe a soule. Could they not thinke I pray you, they sawe an euill spirit? Or rather that they sawe a good spirit, or a good Angel? For it may be shewed by many examples, that euen the faithfull haue beene troubled, and feared at the appearing of good Angels.

In the eight and tenth Chapter of Daniel, we read that the Prophet fel into a sicknesse at the sight of Angels. The Virgin Mary her selfe was afraide when she sawe the Angell Gabriel, so was Zachary the Priest, & many others. *Dan.* 8 10.

In the 12. of ỳ Acts, we reade, that Herode killed Iames the Apostle with the sword, and when he sawe that it pleased the Iewes, he caught Peter also, and when he had *Act.* 12.

put him in prison, hee deliuered him to .16. Souldiours to be kepte, entending after the feast of Passeouer to kill him. But the Angell of the Lorde led S. Peter out of the prison by night through the Souldiours watch, and sette him in the right way to the house of Mary, the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke (where many were gathered togither and prayed.) And when he had knocked at ỹ entrie doore, a maid came forth to harken, named Rhode. But when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the entrie doore for gladnesse, but ran in and tolde howe Peter stood before the entrie, but they said vnto hir thou art mad: yet she affirmed constantly that it was so. Then said they it is his Angell, but Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened and saw him they were astonied. In like maner, now also when the Apostles saw Christ, peraduenture they thought they saiwe a good Angel. For there are Angels giuen of God vnto men to keepe them. Of this matter there is somwhat red in the .18. of S. Matthew, & in the 19 Psal. & we will note somwhat more of it hereafter.

Mat.18.
Psal.19.

The Gentiles also beleeued (as may bee gathered by their writings) that euery man had a good & an euil Angel, and that the good Angel did stir men vp to vertue, & defend them, but that the euil Angell did hurt men whersoeuer he could, and did prouoke them to wickednesse.

If our Elders, when they haue seene or heard any thing of one that hath bene trauelling or dead, did say it is his spirit, it may be, they ment not his soule, but his Angel: for if when as spirits were seene now in this place, and by and by in an other place, they did thinke them to be soules (as in these latter times all men haue beleeued:) in this they were deceiued, as they haue bene in many other things also, for soules are by and by receiued, eyther into euerlasting ioy, or into eternall damnation.

If the Preachers and Teachers had done their duties, and had in this and other pointes of Christian Doctrine,

rightly

rightly instructed the people committed to their charge, or at the least, if they had not forbidden them to reade the holy scriptures, they would haue thought aright both of this, and other things which at this day are in controuersie.

CHAP. XII.

Concerning the holy Fathers, Councels, Bishops, and common people, which say that soules do visibly appeare.

The holy Fathers say that soules appear. Ambrose. Augustine. Gregorie.

THe authoritie of the holie Fathers is obiected against vs, as that which Saint Ambrose writeth of Saint Agnes, and Saint Augustine of Saint Felix, of which we haue spoken before. And that which Abdias hath in the life of the Apostles, that Thomas appeared after his death and preached. Saint Gregorie in his Dialogues, both write diuerse and wonderous things, among others he rehearseth many examples of the dead which appeared, and desired helpe of certaine Saintes, yea and of the Apostles themselues, whiche haue visited some vppon their death beddes, a little before they departed, and many other suche lyke matters, which they that list may read themselues. It is saide that Hierome appeared to Saint Augustine.

Many things fabulous in Gregories Dialogues.

I will not in this place accuse the holie Fathers of vanitie, yet this we must note, they say not they haue beleeued that they whiche appeared, were the soules of dead men, but they spake after the common manner. As touching S. Gregories Dialogues, I cannot hide, this (which many haue noted before mee (that many things are contained in them that are nothing true, but altogither like old wiues tales. Not because the holie Father hath written these things of malice, but for that he being to too credulous, hath put many things into his bookes, rather vppon other mens report, than that he himselfe knew them certainly to be true.

At

At this day also there are many honest and godlie men which haue this faulte, that they are to quicke of beleefe, and altogither ruled by others. They iudge other men by themselues, they would be ashamed to reporte any tying that were false, and thinke suche men in like manner to be affectioned, which doe abuse their simplicitie and goodnesse. Oftentimes these men, through their to muche lightnesse of beleefe, fall into great daungers.

Moreouer, in that age wherin Gregorie liued, men began to attribute much to those apparances and visions. And at that time the true and sincere Doctrine began greatly to decay. Truly the time in which a man happens to liue, is much to be regarded: he himselfe confessed that his times was the latter times. Therefore the Scriptures shoulde haue bene more diligently lent vnto, neither should any thing haue bene retained that was not agreeable vnto them. Some going about to excuse him, for that he hath stuffed his Dialogues ful of miracles and wonders, say he did it to mollifie by those examples, the peruerse and hard hearts of the Longobardes, to the end they might embrace the true Religion, which they had so greeuously persecuted. But that it is in no wise profitable to make knowen the true faith, by these helpes which are nothing else but vaine tales, euen Vives himselfe, in his first booke *De tradendis disciplinis* doth acknowledge.

Counsells approue the appearing of Soules.

Some vrge vs with the authoritie of counsels, which haue allowed certain apparances of soules, and haue suffered some bookes, whiche are extant of such apparitions, to be read for the edifying of the simple, and some againe togither with their visions, they haue cleane reiected.

It is reported that the Counsell of *Constance*, hath allowed this vision:

A certaine Deane when he had giuen ouer his Deanrie, went into the Wildernesse to doe penaunce: after his deathe he appeared to his Bishop, and tolde him that

the

the same houre in which he departed this life, there died thirtie thousand men, among whome only his soule and S. Barnarde were made partakers of eternall salvation, and thrée went into Purgatorie, and all the rest into endlesse damnation. &c. They say that Councels & the churche cannot erre, because they are guided by the holy Ghost. Also in the 24. of Matthew, the Lord doth say in the later dayes there shalbe signes and wonders, that the very elect if it were possible might be seduced, therefore they conclude those things which Councels do saye of such apparitions, are to be beléued. Christs words are not so to be understood that the chosen can neuer be brought into errors (for the contrary may be shewed by many examples) but that they do not abide in errour, albeit some do very hardly get out of the same againe. Tell me, I pray you, who they were that came togither in auncient Councels? were they not holy fathers? It is manifest that in many points they were at variaunce among themselues, and that they haue shewed by their contrary writings: yea and many times they are contrary to themselues, and therefore they haue not alwaies thought aright. Sometime they send be to the word of God, as to the most certaine rule and leauell of faith. There are examples inough, by which it may be shewed, that the old Councelles haue erred in some of their determinations. The Councell of Ariminum hath allowed the Arrians doctrine. The second Ephesin councell did subscribe to Eutiches. The Councell holden at *Carthage*, which Cipriã gathered, pronounced flatly against the scriptures, &c. What shall we say was done in latter times? It is well inough knowen by histories who hath resisted Councels, and ruled them, and what hath bene chiefly handled in them for certaine hundred yeares: And what for the most parte hath by and by followed after them, euen cruel warres and bloudy slaughters. If nowe those auncient Councels coulde erre, who will maruaile

Counsels may erre.

Matth. 24.

that they which haue assembled since haue erred? For as touching the apparitions, that I may (all other things omitted) talke only of them, tell me I pray you who should certifie the Councels, whether this or that vision were true or false? Certainly no Councels can bring to passe that the lyes which haue bene scattered abroade, shall now begin to be true tales, although they of the Councel haue saide they are true.

Popes haue approued the appearing of soules.

It is euen as foolishe to say, the Pope (who wil be counted aboue all Councels) hath confirmed this or that miracle to be true, which they say was wrought in some one monasterie or other. How can the bishop of Rome being so far off, knowe any thing better than they which dwell in the same places? If the bishop hauing no other assurance than out of their words or writings, which perhaps go about to erecte newe pilgrimages, and newe deuises to get money, confirme once that this or that soule was seene, it must straight way without any gaynsaying be beleeued. But if any other men who haue with diligence sought out the truth of the matter, do testifie the contrary: al that they say must not be regarded. Consider (I beseeche you) of this matter. Before, all haue doubted whether the thing were so or no, but assone as the Pope doth giue his verdicte, or some Church man do in his dreame see it to be so, it is a heynouse matter afterwards to doubt of it. O time! O manners!

Many affirme they haue seen soules.

As touching other common and lay men as they terme them, which say they haue seene one after his death, and haue heard and knowne him, and haue spoken with him: I easily graunt they haue seene and heard some thing, and haue thought verily they were soules, and that they did speake with them. But it followeth not therfore, that they were soules indeede, much lesse that any dead man hath appeared in bodie & soule vnto them. For at domes day only, the soules shall returne to their bodies againe. Soules are

spirits

ſpirits, but ſpirits are inuiſible, wherefore they cannot ſo be ſéene, vnleſſe they take ſome outward ſhape vpon them. But it can neuer be proued by the teſtimony of holy ſcripture, that as good and euil Angels, ſo ſoules take ſom ſhapes vpon them. Beſides this, it is moſt true that oftentimes the ſhapes and formes of them whoſe ſoules are not yet ſundred from their bodies by death (as when one lieth vpon his death bed) are no leſſe ſéene than theirs which are already dead. Therfore it is not neceſſary that we beléeue ỹ ghoſtes which are ſéene, to be ſoules. By theſe things you vnderſtand what is to be thought of the tale of Platina, Nauclerus, and others, which write that a certaine Biſhop ſawe Pope Benedict the eight (lately dead) in a ſolitary place ſitting on a blacke horſe, and being demaunded why he was ſo carried about with the blacke horſe, he warned the Biſhop that he ſhould diſtribute the money which was giuen to the vſe of the poore (but now wickedly kept to other purpoſes) vnto thoſe poore folkes to whom of right it belonged. Other tales of like ſtampe are rife euery where.

CHAP. XIII.

Whether ſoules do returne againe out of Purgatorie, and the place which they call *Limbus puerorum*.

That ſoules, which are gone either to heauen or to hell, returne not thence, nor appeare againe before the latter day, perchaunce ſome men would eaſily graunt: but they imagine there is a third place, (which is Purgatorie) out of the which ſoules do returne vpon earth. For as yet the laſt ſentence hath not paſſed on them, and therfore as yet they may be helped, and therfore alſo they do craue help, and ſhewe themſelues vnto men. But we haue proued before at large, both out of the ſcriptures, and alſo out of ỹ writ-

things of the auncient Fathers, that the soules of the faithfull are saued, and that the soules of the vnbeléeuers are damned immediatly without delay, and therefore there is no Purgatorie. Against this, they alledge sundrie argunments, amongst the which this, albeit it be very common, yet is it the chéefest, when they say, that no man is saued except he bee purged from all his sinnes, and that sinne cleaueth vnto vs euen vnto the graue. If we say that puritie and cleanneſſe consisteth not in our workes, or in the paines which wee endure, but that God through faith in his sonne Iesus Christ (who is our onely redemption, iustification, satisfaction, and raunsome for our sinnes) doth iustifie vs: they straight aunswere, that our faith is vnperfect, and that the moſte godly men complaine when they depart hence, of the weakeneſſe of their faith. And therefore that God doth not take vp suche kinde of men straightwayes into heauen, nor yet because they are not vtterly voyde of faith, thrust them presently downe into hell. And therefore, that there is a middle place betwéene both, which is called Purgatorie, in which the soules are purified from the imperfection whiche remained in them at the time of their death, and out of the which they are deliuered by the merits of the liuing, and by large pardons. Is not this as much as to attribute that vnto our owne paines and to eternall fire, which ought only to be ascribed vnto the death of Christ? Doth not Christ teache vs, that if at any time we feele any weakneſſe of faith, we shuld crie out with the Apoſtles, Lord increaſe our faith? Doth God disdaine to heare the prayers of his faithfull people in the extremitie of death? Christ saith, he that is washed hath no néede saue to washe his féete, but he is cleane euery whitte: Hée will saue vs, not for the worthinesse of our faith, but by his méere grace onely. He doth bestow these things amongst vs, as if some riche man did fréely giue meate and drinke vnto others, whereof some of them

receiueth it in wodden, some in earthen, and some in siluer or golden vessels: or as if a Prince did distribute vnto euery one a piece of golde, and some receiue it with a feeble hand, and some with a strong and lustie hand. He that hath the hand, receiueth money as well as he that hath the strong hande. Saint Paule exhorteth the Thessalonians in his first Epistle and fourth Chapter, that they mourne not for the dead as the Gentiles do. If there had bene a fire of Purgatorie, as they haue falsely imagined, he could not haue bene angry with them, although they had taken their friendes departure somewhat impatiently, &c. Other arguments which are brought for the confirmation of purgatorie, are of late so confuted by many godly and learned men, that it is maruaile our aduersaries will so often repeate them. 1. *Thess.* 4.

But before I leaue this matter, I will here insert this historie following. A certaine Germain being accused by the Inquisitours of heresie (as they terme it) that amongest his companions he denied Purgatorie, contraris to the common consent of the Catholike Churche, made his answeare thus: If our parish Priest (quoth he) whome I credite very much, preach vnto vs true doctrine in the Pulpet, either there is no Purgatorie at all, or else it is cleane emptie. For he oftentimes saieth, that Turkes, Iewes, heretikes, and wicked men, goe not into Purgatorie, but straight into Hell fire, from whence they shall neuer bee deliuered: Then that by Pardons whiche are euery where solde for money, many soules are restored to their first perfection. And moreouer, that the Masse is of such force, that there is not one sung in all the world, by whiche one soule at the least is not deliuered out of the flames of Purgatorie. If these things (quoth he) be true, (for I will not go about to refell that which maister Parson hath saide) I will stande in this my opinion. For you do all complaine, that the nomber of the Catholikes is

verie small, the greater part of men being diuided into sundry sectes, and the multitude of Epicures daily increasing. Then are all mens purses many times drawne dry by pardoners, which for mony sell their indulgences, that by them the soules of men may bee deliuered out of the torments of Purgatorie. Furthermore, there is no village but there are a great many Masses sung in it, before any one husbandman dieth. What followeth then, but that there is either no Purgatorie, or one vtterly voyde and emptie? When the Inquisitors (who knew very well that their men commonly taught such doctrine) heard these things, they were amazed, and taking aduise togither, they all berated him for occupying his head about questions nothing appertaining vnto him, which they commaunded him to leaue vnto Diuines, and to follow his owne businesse.

There was in our Countrey an honest and sober man, who before the light of the Gospell began to appeare, vsed this Dilemma: The Bishop of *Rome* either hath authoritie to bring soules out of the paines of Purgatorie, or else he hath no authoritie: If he haue that power, and will not vse it, except he receiue money, he cannot escape the fault of cruelty and couetousnesse: But if hee haue no such authoritie, surely it is great villainie to robbe so many widowes and fatherlesse children, and so arrogantly to boast himselfe of authoritie whiche he hath not. And if there bee no Purgatorie (as by the holy Scriptures it plainly gathered there is not) surely then mennes soules can neyther returne from thence, nor offer themselues to be seene of men.

Dilemma, is a kind of argument or reasoning, which euery way conuinceth him vnto whome it is spoken.

Limbus puerorum.

Now as touching the fourth place, namely Limbus puerorum, (in the which innocent children, as as they call them, are saide to be) Papistes themselues scant dare affirme, that they returne againe and appeare vnto men, and craue their helpe: for they teache, that if they depart without baptisme, they shall neuer enioy the sight of God, and

for

for that cause they may not be buried in the same Churchyard with other Christians. Merciful God! how many godly matrones hath this false deuise miserably vexed? I call it a false deuise, for that they bring nothing out of the holie scriptures whereby to proue this point of doctrine. The scriptures do not attribute so much vnto externall baptisme, which is by water. Was the condition of infants better in the olde Testament than in the new? You do not reade that the olde Fathers, supposed that infants which died before the eight day, and therefore were not circumcised, should be separated from the sight of God for euer. Dauid the king and prophet, said he should follow his seruant, whom God had called out of this life before he was circumcised. But it was not Dauids meaning that hee should goe into a place where he should bee depriued of the sight of God for euer. But it appertaineth not much vnto our purpose to dispute any further hereof. Thus haue I now answered the chiefest arguments of our aduersaries, whereby they would proue the soules of good and euil men, to offer themselues to be seene sometimes of them that liue, after their departure by death from their bodies.

CHAP. XIIII.

What those things are which men see and heare: and first that good Angels do sometimes appeare.

BVt thou wilt say, I do not yet clearely and plainly vnderstand what manner of things those are, whereof (as it is sayd before) Historiographers, holy Fathers, and others, make mention: as that holie Apostles, Bishoppes, Martyres, Confessours, Virgines, and manie other which died long agoe, appeared vnto certaine men lying at the point of death, gaue them warning, answeared vnto certaine questions, commaunded them to doe this or that thyng: and that some thing is seene

and

and heard at certeine times, whiche not only affirmeth it selfe to be this or that soule, but also sheweth howe it may be succoured, and afterwardes returning againe, giueth great thankes vnto them of whome it hath receiued such a benefite: that the husband being dead, came in the nighte vnto his wife nowe a widowe, and that seldome times any notable thing hathe happened, whithe was not foreshewed vnto some man by certaine signes and tokens. You wil say, I heare and vnderstand very wel that these thinges are not mens soules, which continually remaine in their appointed places, I pray you then what are they? To conclude in fewe words, If it be not a vaine persuasion proceeding through weakenesse of the senses through feare, or some suche like cause, or if it be not deceit of men, or some naturall thing, wherof we haue spoken muche in the firste part, it is either a good or euill Angell, or some other forewarning sent by God, concerning the which we will speake more orderly and fully hereafter. Our sauioure witnesseth in the Gospell, that children haue their good Angells: and we reade in the 18. of Matthew, that the Lorde saide: Take heede ye contemne not one of these litle ones: for I saye vnto you, that their Angels in Heauen do alwayes behold the face of my father whiche is in Heauen. Which words are not so to be taken, as though they were neuer sent downe into the earth, but the Lord here speaketh after the manner of men. For as seruaunts stande before their maisters to fulfill their commaundement, euen so are the Angels prest and ready to serue God. Esay the 63. The Angell of his face, that is, which standeth ready in his sight, preserued them. And further they which often stand in presence of their Lorde, are acceptable vnto them and priuy to their secrets. But of this place of Math. Saincte Herome in his commentaries, and other fathers do conclude, that God doth assigne vnto euery soule assone as he createth him his peculiar Angell, which taketh care

Angells appeare. *Matth.* 18.

Esay. 63.

of

of him. But whether that euerie one of the elect haue his proper Angell, or many Angels be appointed vnto him, it is not expressly set forth, yet this is most sure and certaine, that God hath giuen his Angels in charge to haue regarde and care ouer vs. Dauiel witnesseth in his tenth Chapter, *Dani.10.* that Angels haue also charge of kingdomes, by whom God keepeth and protecteth them, and hindreth the wicked counsels of the diuell. It may be proued by many places of scripture, that all Christian men haue not only one Angell, but also many, whome God imployeth to their seruice. In the 34. Psalme it is sayd, the Angell of the Lord pitcheth his *Psal.34.* tentes round about them which feare the Lord, and helpeth them: which ought not to bee doubted but that it is also at this day, albeit we see them not. We reade that they appearing in sundry shapes, haue admonished men, haue comforted them, defended them, deliuered them from daunger, and also punished the wicked. Touching this matter, there are plentifull examples, which are not needfull to be repeated in this place. Sometimes they haue either appeared in sleepe, or in maner of visions, and sometimes they haue performed their office, by some internall operations: as when a mans minde foreshewth him, that a thing shall so happen, and after it happeneth so indeed, which thing I suppose is done by God, through the ministrie of Angels. Angels for the most part take vpon them the shapes of men, wherein they appeare. And so it may be, that S. Felix, and Saint Agnes, and other which haue appeared vnto honest and godly men, were the Angels of God. Angels haue appeared not only one at a time, but also whole Armies and Hostes, of them, as vnto Iacob the patriarch, and Heliseus the Prophet. It is read in the Ecclesiasticall history written by Socrates and Sozomenus, that Archadius the Emperour releued Gaina, with all his Armie of souldiers, into the Citie of *Constantinople*, to defend it, but this traitor went about to get the rule of the Citie into his owne hands, and there-

Whole armies of Angels.

Cõstantinople preserued by the appearing of Angels.

fore he sent a band of men to fire the Emperours Pallace, which sodeinly espied a great hoste of Angels, of large stature, armed like vnto souldiers, whereupon they gaue ouer their enterprise of fiering. Then sent he others who reported the very same: At the last he went himselfe, and sawe it to be so, and so left his purpose: and thus God by a miraculous meanes, preserued the Cittie and Church of *Constantinople* from the craftie subtiltie of the tyrant.

Augustine. Whereas S. Augustine in his booke *De cura pro mortuis agenda*, Chapter 10. writeth, that dead men, haue appeared vnto the liuing in dreames, or any other meanes whatsoeuer, shewing them where their bodies laie vnburied, and requiring them to burie them. There he supposeth, that these are the workes of Angels by the dispensation of Gods prouidence, vsing vnto good purpose, both good and euil Angels, according to the vnsearchable depth of his iudgements. He saith not that such soules appeare in slæpe, but the similitude of soules. He addeth further, if the soules of the dead had any thing to do with matters of the liuing, and that we might talke with them as often as we list in our slæpe, his mother no night would leaue him, who to liue with him, followed him both by sea and by lande, such loue bare she towards her sonne.

That

CHAP. XV.

That sometimes, yea and for the most part, euill Angels do appeare.

COntrariwise, euill angels are hurtfull and enemies vnto men, they followe them euery where, to the ende they may withdrawe them from true worshipping of God, and from faith in his onely sonne Iesu Christ, vnto sundry other things. These appeare in diuers shapes: for if the diuell (as Paule doth witnesse) transformeth himselfe into an Angell of light, no lesse may he take the shape of a Prophet, an Apostle, Euangelist, Bishop, and Martyr, and appeare in their likenesse: or to bewitch vs, that we verily suppose we heare or see them in very deede. He taketh on him to tell of thinges to come, whether hee hit them right or wrong. Hee affirmeth that hee is this or that soule, that he may bee deliuered by this or that meanes, that by these meanes he may purchase credite and authoritie, vnto those things which haue no ground of scripture. Paule.

By meanes of false myracles, he decreeth new Hollydayes, Pilgrimages, Chappels, and Aultars: by Coniurations, blessings, enchauntments, he attempteth to cure the sicke, to make his doings haue authoritie.

You shall reade marueilous straunge things in Arnobius, Lactantius, and other holie Fathers, who wrote against the Gentiles and their superstition, after what sorte Diuels haue deluded the miserable Gentiles, and haue entrapped them in many errors. He ioyned and hid himselfe in their Idolles, he spake through them from one place to an other, he made them to meue, and did such straunge myracles, that veris lame men leauing their stilts whereon they leaned in the Temples of their Idols,

returned

come to their houses, without any helpe or stay of them, but especially in the temple of Æsculapius (who was counted the Patron of Phisicke) many of these kinde of miracles are reported to haue happened. Wherefore there is no cause, why the Papistes at this day, shoulde so insolently glorie of the like myracles, by the which they goe about to proue their intercession of Saints, and such lyke trumperie.

CHAP. XVI.

Of wondrous Monsters, and such like.

NOwe as concerning other straunge things, we must hereafter search what nature they are of: as when one tieth that there is some what seene, or some great noyse is sodeinly heard, but especially that many signes and wonders happen before the death of great Princes. It is well knowne by Histories, what signes went before the death of Iulius Cæsar, amongst the which, a great noyse was heard in the night time, in very many places farre and neare.

As concerning other Emperors, and Kings, and other great mens deathes, we reade that some certaine forewarnings were heard or seene, we must also consider what those straunge things are, which for the most part happen before the innouations of kingdomes, before battailes, seditions, and subuersions of Cities.

I say flatly, euen as I sayde before concerning spirits: if they be not euyll perswasions, or naturall things, then are they forewarnings of God, which are sent, eyther by good Angels, or by some other meanes vnknowne vnto vs, that we might vnderstand that all these things happen not by aduenture, without the will and pleasure of God,

but

but that life and deathe, peace and warre, the alteration of Religion, the exchaunge of Empires, and of other things, are in his power, that we might thereby learne to feare him, and to call vppon his name. In the meane season, Sathan also layneth and worketh many things to terrifie men, and to plant superstition in their hearts. But that all things are done by Sathan, hereby we may understand: It chaunceth that one is thrust thorow and slaine by one with whome he neuer was at variance, but hath euer vsed him as his friende, some man is drowned, or falleth from some high place, or otherwise is miserably slaine, an euill spirit can haue no foreknowledge hereof (for there are no naturall signes, or coniectures going before them, as there are in diseases) yet notwithstanding, some signes and rare casualties fall out before. Hereof do I gather, that these things are wrought by God, who onely knoweth that they shall come to passe, and they are not onely admonishments vnto them, whom they especially concerne, but also vnto them which heare them, and are present at the doing of them.

There was a certaine Magistrate within the liberties of *Tigurine*, not long before I wrote this, whome certaine of his friendes tarried for to breake their fast with him before he toke his iourney, and thus waiting, they supposed they heard a knife falling from the vpper part, or flore of the stewe, wherein they were, yet saw they nothing, and sodeinly as they communed togither of this straunge wonder, they thought they heard it againe. In the meane while commeth the Magistrate, vnto whome they declare what had happened, and as they had scant ended their talke, the knife fell againe the third time, in the hearing of the Magistrate, who before doubted very much of the matter. And therefore taking occasion hereby, he began to exhort them that whereas within fiue dayes after, a great mar[illegible] should be kept in the same place, they should abstaine[illegible] ta-

to maintaine peace, and obserue sobrietie, least perchaunce through quarrelling and murther, it should bee a bloudie marriage. After he taking his iourney, and within a day or twaine dispatching his businesse, as he was returning towards his Castle, (his horse falling into a riuer, whiche was sodeinly encreased with raine) after he had long striued with the water, at the last died miserably.

And that the diuell doth delude men with straunge happes, hereof I gather, that if any be taken with greeuous sickenesse, so that not onely the Phisitian, but also the sicke themselues dispaire of their owne health, in the night time there is heard a noyse as if one were making a coffin or chest to laie one in, or were burying a dead bodie: that suppose I to be an illusion of the diuil, for he thinketh verily the diseased will die, whom God by meanes of godly and earnest praiers, doth restore againe to his former healty.

Plinie. Whereas Plinie writeth that rauens are of such sharp senses, that they will flie three or foure dayes before, vnto the place where carryon will afterwardes be, it is altogither vaine and fabulous. If this were graunted, it were no absurditie to say, that the diuell hath a knowledge of things to come, yea euen where there are no naturall causes, &c. Moreouer he may by Gods permission, if warres and mutinies be towards, stirre the instruments of warre, and all other kinde of munition as it lyeth in the Armorie, he can make a noyse and reare a clamour and crie, as it were of a great Armie in the aire, and play as it were on a Drum, and do other such things, which all Historiographers affirme with one voyce, haue oftentimes chaunced.

That

CHAP. XVII.

That it is no hard thing for the Diuell to appeare in diuers ſhapes, and to bring to paſſe ſtraunge things.

BVt it is no difficult matter for the Diuel to appeare in diuers ſhapes, not only of thoſe which are aliue, but alſo of dead men, (whereof I ſpake alſo before, when I entreated of Samuels appearing) yea, and (which is a leſſe matter) in the fourme of beaſts and birds, &c. as to appeare in the likeneſſe of a blacke Dog, a Horſe, an Owle, and alſo to bring incredible things to paſſe, it is a thing moſt manifeſt: for hee may through long and great experience, vnderſtand the effects and force of naturall things, as of hearbes, ſtones, &c. and by meanes hereof worke marueilous matters. And then he is a ſubtile and quicke ſpirite, which can readily take things in hand, which in each thing is of no ſmall weight. By his quickneſſe, and by his knowledge in naturall things, he may eaſily deceiue the eye ſight, and other ſenſes of man, and hide thoſe things which are before our face, and conney other things into their places. Whereof the holy ſcriptures, and hiſtories, and continuall experience beareth record. How did the wicked ſpirit handle Iob? what did he not bring to paſſe in ſhort ſpace? What ſtraunge workes of an euil ſpirit did Bileam bring to paſſe? did he not purchaſe a famous name by his Magicall Artes? what wonderfull great miracles did Pharaos Sorcerers? Did not Simon Magus ſo bewitch the *Samaritanes* with his vnlawfull Artes, that he would ſay he was the great vertue of God? Touching this Coniurer, the olde Fathers write many things, as Ireneus in his firſt booke and tenth Chapter. Euſebius in his ſecond booke and thirteenth Chapter.

Egeſippus

Egeſippus writeth in his third booke and ſecond Chapter, of the deſtruction of *Hieruſalem*, that this Symon came to *Rome*, and there ſet himſelfe againſt Peter, boaſting that he could flie vp into heauen, and that he came at the day appointed vnto the Mount *Capitoline*, where leaping from the rocke, he flew a good while not without the great admiration of the people, who now began to credit his words, but ſodeinly he fell downe and brake his leg, and after being carried vnto *Aritia*, there died.

Iohannes Tritenhemius, Abbot of *Spanheimium*, writeth in his Chronicles concerning the Monaſterie of *Hirſgraue* of the order of S. Bennet, in the yeare of our Lorde 970. that Peter and Baianus, the two ſonnes of one Simon a Monke, ruled ouer the *Bulgarians*, wherof the one, namely Baianus, was throughly ſeene in the Arte of Necromancie, and thereby wrought many myracles. He chaunged himſelfe into a Wolfe ſo often as he liſt, or into the likeneſſe of an other beaſt, or in ſuch ſort as he could not be diſcerned of any man, and many other ſtraunge things hée could doo, and did, whereby he brought men into great admiration.

And after in the yeare 876. he writeth, that there was a certaine Iewe named Sedechias, ſometimes Philoſopher and Phiſitian vnto Lewes the Emperour, who being very cunning in ſorcerie, did ſtraunge miracles and wonderfull ſleights before the Princes, and before all other men. For he brought it to paſſe by his cunning, that he ſéemed to deuoure an armed man with his horſe, and all his harneſſe, and alſo a carte loaden with hay, togither with the horſe and carter. He cut off mens heads, their hands and féete, which he ſet in a baſen before all the lookers on to behold, with the bloud running about the baſen: which by and by he would put againe vppon the places whence they ſéemed to haue bene cut off, without any hurt to the parties. He was ſéene and heard of all men to exerciſe hunting and

running

running, and suche like things in the aire and clouds, as men are accustomed to exercise vpon the earth. He practised so many and diuers deceites, that all men marueiled and were astonished out of measure.

In the yeare of our Lord. 1323. when Frederike Duke of *Austrich*, who was chosen Emperour against Lewes, as the same author witnesseth, was vanquished in a great battail betweene *Ottinga* and *Molndorfus*, and deliuered into the hands of Lewes, who sent him away into a strong castell to be safely kepte: It chaunced shortly after, that a coniurer going vnto his brother Lupoldus in *Austriche*, promised, that by the helpe of a spirit, he would within the compasse of an houre, deliuer Frederike safe and sounde out of captiuitie, if he would promise him and giue him a worthie reward for his paines. The Duke aunswered him: if thou wilt (quoth he) do as thou makest promise, I wil worthily reward thee. So the Magitian with the Duke entring his circle of coniuration in an houre most conuenient, calleth the Spirit whiche was accustomed to obey his commaundement. Whome, when he appeared in the likenesse of a man, he commaunded by the vertue of his coniurations, that he should spedily bring vnto him into *Austriche*, Duke Frederike, deliuered safely out of prison. Vnto whome the spirit aunswering, said, If the captiue Duke will come with me, I will willingly obey thy commaundement. This saide, the spirite flieth awaye into *Bauarie*, and taking vppon him the forme of a Pilgrime, he entreth into the prison where the Duke was kepte prisoner: whome allone as he sawe, the Spirit who was sente as messenger vnto him, said: If thou wilt be deliuered out of captiuitie, mount thee vp vpon this horse, and I will bring thee safe and sounde without any hurte into *Austrich* vnto Duke Lupoldus thy brother. Vnto whome the Duke saide: Who art thou? The Spirte aunswered: Aske not who I am, because it appertaineth

nothing

nothing to the purpose, but get thee vp on the horse which I offer thee, and I will bring thee safe and sound, and freely deliuered into *Austrich*. Which when the Duke heard, hee was taken with a certaine horror, and feare, being otherwise a hardy knight: and when he had blessed himself with the signe of the holy crosse, the spirite sodainly vanished away with the blacke horse, which he had proffered him, and returned emptie againe vnto him that sent him: of whom being rebuked because he had not brought the prisoner, he declared all the matter vnto him in order. Duke Frederick at the last being deliuered out of prison, confessed that it had so happened vnto him in his captiuitie the very same day they named. This historie is also to be seene in the Chronicles of the *Heluetians*.

There are also Coniurers found euen at this day, who bragge of themselues that they can so by inchauntments saddle an horse, that in a fewe houres they wil dispatch a very long iourney. God at the last wil chasten these men with deserued punishment. What straunge things are reported of one Faustus a Germane, which he did in these our dayes by inchauntments?

I will speake nothing at this time, of those old Sorcerers, Apollonius, and others, of whom the historics report straunge and incredible things. Hags, Witches, and Inchaunters, are said to hurt men and cattell, if they do but touch them or stroake them, they do horrible things whereof there are whole bookes extant. Iuglers and Tumblers, by nimblenesse do many things, they will bid one eate meate, which when they spit out againe, they cast forth ordure and such like. Magitians, Iuglers, Inchanters, and Necromanciers, are no other than seruants of the Diuel: do you not thinke their maister reserueth some cunning vnto him selfe?

Howbeit this is not to be dissembled, that the diuel doth glory of many things which indeede he cannot performe:

as

as that he saith, that he raised the dead out of their graues. &c. He may in very deede by Gods sufferaunce, shewe the shapes of them vnto men, but he hath no such power ouer the dead bodies.

CHAP. XVIII.

Diuels doo sometimes bid men doo those things which are good, and auoide things that are euill: sometimes they tell truth, and for what cause.

IF those spirites which seeke helpe at mens hands be not soules, but Diuels, many will say, why then do they perswade men vnto good things, exhort them vnto vertue, and call them from vice. For they say, Iudge vprightly, take heede of theft and extortion, restore goods vniustly gotten vnto their owners, beware of periurie, surfets, and drunkennesse, enuie and hatred, lying and deceit, pray earnestly, come to church often, &c.

The Diuell is not pleased when wee do good, and auoide euill: nothing woulde greeue him more, than that we should liue accordyng to the prescript worde of God. Therefore they are not Diuels which bid us do good, and eschue euil.

Moreouer, those Spirites speake truthe, but the Diuell is a lyer, and is called by Christe, the father of lyes. Therefore we may not say that they are diuellish Spirits.

Vnto this argument I answere thus: he doth this for his owne aduantage. If he should shewe himselfe so, as he is by nature, he should little profit. That whiche he doth, he doth it to this ende, that he may purchase credite vnto his wordes, and that he might the better thrust other things vpon men, and bring and driue them into sun-

dry errours, whereby they forsaking the worde of God might giue eare vnto Spirites. Did not the seruaunts of vncleane Spirits, I meane false Prophets, come in times past vnder sheepes skinnes, and fayned themselues to tender the peoples commoditie, whereas in very deed in the meane space they sought after another thing, that is, that when they had obteined great authoritie, they might pill and poule other men, and fill their owne bags with golde and siluer? Do not all heretickes yet at this day say, they are sent from God, and that we must eschue wickednesse, and seeke after vertue? Didst thou neuer heare that theeues trauelling by the way with those on whose company they light, haue talked of liuing honestly, and of the punishment of wicked men, and the rewarde of good men, to the ende that after they might take ỹ aduantage of them vnawares? Whereas the Diuell hath fayned himselfe to bee otherwise than he is, it hath brought forth innumerable errors, superstitions, and false worshippings in the Churche of God. For Bishops in proces of time neglected the word of God, they would accept the Diuell and receiue him as an Angell of light, when he came not in a blacke and horrible, but a pleasaunt and acceptable forme. He speaketh some good things, that he may intermedle euil things therwith, he speaketh truth, that he may scatter abroade lyes, and rote them in mens hearts. So Simon in Virgil, mingled falshood with truth, that he might the better entrape the *Troians*.

Sathan doth imitate craftie gamesters, who suffer a plaine and simple yong man to winne a while of them, that afterwards being greedie to play, they may lurch him of all his golde and siluer. He followeth them which once or twise iustly repaie vnto their creditors such money as they haue borrowed, keeping their promise duly, that afterwards they may obtaine a great summe of them, and then deceiue them.

The

The diuel sometimes vttereth the truth, that his wordes may haue the more credit, and that he may the more easily beguile them. He that would vtter euil wares, doth not only set them forth in wordes, but doth also so trim and decke them, that they seeme excellent good, whereby they are the more saleable: this Art also the diuel knoweth, for he painteth out his stuffe that he may obtrude it vnto other men in the steede of good ware. S. Ambrose writeth in his Commentaries vpon the first Epistle to the Thessalonians, and fift chapter, expounding these words: Quench not the spirit. Despise not prophecying. Examine all things, and keepe that which is good. Euill spirites are wont to speake good things craftily, as it were by imitation, and amongst those they priuily insinuate wicked thinges, that by meanes of those things which are good, euil things may be admitted, and because they are supposed the wordes of one spirit, they may not be discerned asunder, but by that which is lawfull, an vnlawfull thing may bee commended by authoritie of the name, and not by reason of vertue, &c. Ambrose.

Hereunto appertaine those wordes which we reade in S. Chrysostomes second sermon De Lazara. There he sheweth that many simple men haue bene in this errour, that they haue thought the soules of those which were slaine by some violent death, did become Diuels. He saith further, that the Diuell hath perswaded many Witches, and such as serue him being in this errour, that they should kill the tender bodies of many yong men, hoping they shuld become Diuels, and do them seruice. And by and by he addeth: But these things are not true, no, I say, they are not. What is it then that Diuels say? I am the soule of such a Monke? Verily I beleeue it not, euen for this, that Diuels do auouche it: for they deteine their auditours. Wherefore Paule also commaundeth them to silence, albeit they speake truth, lest taking occasion by truth, they mingle lyes therewith, and so purchase themselues credit. Why the diuel doth sometimes tel truth

bit. For when they had said: These men are the seruants of the most high God, shewing vnto you the way of saluation: The Apostle not content herewith, commaunded the prophecying spirite vnto silence, and to come forth of the mayd. And yet what harme speake they? These men are the seruantes of the most high God. But because the most parte of simple men haue not vnderstanding alwayes to iudge of those things which are vttered by diuels, he at once excludeth them from all credit. Thou art (saith he) of the number of infamous spirites, it belongeth not to thée to speake freely, hold thy peace, keepe silence, it is not thy office to preach. This is the authoritie of the Apostles: why takest thou vppon thée that which appertaineth not vnto thée, hold thy peace, be thou infamous. So also did Christ sharply rebuke the diuels saying vnto him: We know thée who thou art, therein prescribing vnto vs a lawe, that we should in no wise trust the diuel, albeit he tell the truth.

Acts 16.

Marke. 1. *Luke.* 4.

Sith we know these things, let vs in no wise beléeue the diuel, nay rather if he say any thing that is truth, let vs flée from him and shunne him. For it is not lawfull exactly to learne sounde and wholesome doctrine of diuels, but out of the holy scriptures.

That you may therfore know that it can in no wise be, that a soule once departed out of the bodie can come vnder the tyrannie of the diuell, heare what S. Paule saith: For he that is dead is iustified from sinne, that is, he sinneth no more. For if the diuil can do no hurt vnto the soule while it is in the bodie, it is euident, he cannot hurt it when it is departed out of the bodie. &c. By all these things it is plaine, what manner of things those are which are heard and séene.

The

The third parte of this Booke, in which is ſhewed, why, or to what ende God ſuffereth Spirits to appeare, and other ſtraunge thinges to happen: as alſo howe men ought to behaue themſelues when they meete with any ſuche things.

CHAP. I.

God by the appearing of Spirits doth exerciſe the faithfull, and puniſh the vnbeleeuers.

IT foloweth now hereafter to be intreated of, why God ſuffreth ſpirits, ghoſts, and horrible ſightes to appeare, &c. And alſo why he doth permit other ſtraunge and miraculous thinges to happen: And furthermore, how men ought to behaue themſelues when they ſée anye ſuche things.

God doth ſuffer ſpirits to appeare vnto his elect, vnto a good ende, but vnto the reprobate they appeare as a puniſhment. And as all other thinges turne to the beſt vnto ỹ faithfull, euen ſo do theſe alſo: for if they be good ſpirits, which appeare vnto men, warning, and defending them, therby do they gather the care, prouidence, and fatherly affection of God towardes them. But in caſe they bee euill ſpirites, (as

Cauſes why God ſuffereth ſpirites to appeare.

(as for the most part they are) the faithfull are moued by occasion of them vnto true repentance. They looke diligently vnto themselues so long as they liue, least the enimie of mankinde, who is readie at all assaies, and lieth alwaies in waight, should bring them into mischiefe, and take further vauntage to vexe and hurt them. God also by these meanes doeth exercise and trie their faith and patience, to the end they continue in his word, and receiue nothing contrary to the same, haue it neuer so faire a shewe, nor do any manner of thing against his worde, although those spirites do not straightwayes cease to vexe them.

God doth also suffer them to be exercised with haunting of spirites, for this cause, that they should be the more humble and lowely. For in the second Epistle to the Corinth. and. xii. chap. Paul saith: And least I should be exalted out of mesure, through the excellencie of reuelations, ther was giuen vnto me vnquietnesse through the flesh, euen the messenger of Sathan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure. For this thing besought I the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said vnto me: My grace is sufficient for thee, for my strength is made perfect through weakenesse. Except God did shut vp the way before vs with certaine stops and lets, we should not know our selues, we shoulde not vnderstande whereof we stand in need, we should not so earnestly pray vnto God, to deliuer vs from euill, to strengthen our faith, and to giue vs patience, and other necessarie things. Neither should we be touched with compassion of other mennes miserie which are vexed with spirits: but we woulde rather say, that they cannot tell what they speake, and that they imagine many vaine feares. Moreouer, if other vnderstande that godly men are for their exercise vexed by spirits, they become more patient when soeuer they are sicke, or otherwise troubled, acknowledging their owne harmes to be but small in comparison of other mens. For nothing is

more

more grieuous, than when a man is tormented by the Diuel.

Now as touching infidells, they are constrained, will they, or nill they, to confesse, that there are diuels, for there are many which would neuer be persuaded, there are good or euill Angels or spirits, except sometimes they had experience thereof indeede. God suffereth these things to chasten them. For so muche as they will giue no place vnto truth, but are wilfully deceiued, it is good reason they be taught by diuellish illusions what they must do, or leaue vndone, and that they be illuded by euil spirits, after some other meanes. Seeing of spirites to the wicked is a punishment.

Thus we reade in the 13. chapter of Deuteronomie: if there arise among you a prophet or a dreamer of dreames, and giue thée a signe and wonder, and that signe or wonder that he hath saide come to passe, and then say, let vs goe after straunge Gods, which thou hast not knowne, and let vs serue them: hearkē not thou vnto the words of that prophet, or dreamer of dreames. For the Lorde thy God proueth you, to wit, whether ye loue the Lord your God with all your soule. Ye shall walke after the Lorde your God and feare him, kéepe his commandements, and hearken vnto his voice, serue him and cleaue vnto him. And he addeth further, that the same prophet or dreamer shall die the death. *Deut.13.*

By these words we do not only sée that God doth suffer suche lewde fellowes to worke maruellous thinges, but also to what ende and purpose he permitteth it, that is, to trie his faithfull, how constant they be, and how faithfully they would beléeue in him, if at any time spirits do come and foretell things to happen hereafter. Our Sauiour Christ saith in the third Chapter of Saint Iohn: This is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loued darknesse more than light, because their deedes were euill: for euery one that doth euill, hateth the light, *Iohn 3.*

neither commeth he to the light, least his dedes should be reproued, &c. By the which words our Sauiour sheweth the cause why the worlde is condemned, which is, because they receiue not the light of the word of God, or Christe himselfe, who is the light of the worlde, set forth vnto vs in his word: but rather shut their eyes against the cleare light, preferring darkenesse, that is, errors, superstition, and wickednesse, before the word of God. If God then condemne and reiect the vnthankfull world, what maruell is it, if hee vexe them with spirites and vaine apparitions?

Iohn 5. Christ saieth in the fifth of Iohn, I come in my Fathers name, and you receiue mee not: If an other come in his owne name, you receiue him.

Christe laboured for their health and saluation: this they would not acknowledge, but refused him: therefore was it the iust iudgement of God, that they shuld receiue others, that hunted after their owne commoditie and profit: suche as were Theudas, Iudas of *Galilee*, and many other false doctors, and seditious seducers. Wherefore if any refuse to giue eare to Christ and his Ministers, it is by the iust iudgement of God, that they hearken vnto spirites, and suche lyke things. Sainte Paule in the seconde to the

2. Thessa. 2. Thessalonians and second Chapter, writeth of Antichrist, that he shoulde exercise great tyrannie in the Churche of God, and sheweth against whome, and for what cause God will suffer him so to do, saying: Among them that perish: because they receiued not the loue of the truth that they might be saued. And therefore God shall send them strong delusions, that they shoulde beleeue lyes, that all they might be damned, whiche beleeue not the truth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse. And in the fourth Chap-

2. Timo. 4. ter of his seconde Epistle to Timothie, he earnestly beseecheth his scholler to be diligent in preaching daily. He giueth this reason: for the time will come, when they shall not suffer wholesome doctrine: but after their owne lustes

shall

shall they (whose eares itche,) get them an heape of teachers, and shall withdrawe their eares from the truth, and shalbe turned vnto fables. Now we see the cause why god dothe suffer seducers, false teachers, and wicked spirites, to deceiue men in the place of true doctours: which is, for that eyther they vtterly despise his worde or little esteeme it, and cannot abide godly and constant preachers.

Examples of the Wicked punished by delusions of spirits pharao, Exodus. Samuel.

Touching whiche matter, wee will alleage a fewe examples. Pharao contemned God and his seruants, Moyses and Aaron, wherefore God blinded his eyes, that he gaue himselfe to be ruled by his Magi or wise men, and at the last perished miserably in the red Sea.

Saule would not giue eare vnto Samuell, who bare a right hart and good affection towards his king: he loued him not (as by reason he shoulde haue done) but hated him, and all other that loued him right well, for he contemned the worde of God. Wherefore it came to passe, that being in extreme daunger, he sought helpe of a witch to reare Samuel from the dead, ý he might now vse his aduise, whō he dispised beeing aliue, and disdained to heare him. This woman reareth one, who is no otherwise called Samuell, than when false gods, are called gods, when in very deede they are not gods, but wood and stones, or rather (as Paul saith). 1. Cor. 10. very diuels. This counterfait Samuel giueth him neither comfort nor Counsell, but driueth him to vtter desperation. The same hapned vnto Saule which chaunceth vnto those stubborne children, whiche despise their parents, contemne their counsel, & would gladly wish their death, and at the last grow vnto ý point, ý they would willingly take in hand a great iorney on condition it might be graunted them to heare them giue their last counsell. *1. Cor. 10.*

An other example hereof. Acab king of Israel, & Iezabel his wife had many godly prophets, amongst whō Elias was a man indued with the gifte of shewing and working miracles. But they did not only contēne those prophets, but also Achab.

cruelly murthered so many of them as they coulde catche. Yet amongst the rest, they especially laboured to intrape Elias, who was exceeding zealous. The Baalamites were in greate fauoure with the King: but especially with the Quéene, as her chief dearlings. And when the time approched, that Achab should suffer due and worthie punishment for his Idolatrie and wickednesse, wherein he had long time liued, he entred councell with his kinsman Iosaphat, that they ioyning their powers togither might recouer againe the Citie of *Ramoth Gilead*, which the Assirians had taken from him. Iosaphat allowed well this deuise, notwithstanding hée woulde in any wise aske counsaile hérein of God. Achab, therefore gathereth togither a Councell of 400. priests of Baall, who all with one voyce, exhorted him to goe on with his enterprise, assuring him of most certaine victorie. One of them named Sedechias, was so vainly bold, that putting hornes of yron on his head, he saide: With these hornes shalt thou pushe the Assirians. But Iosaphat suspecting the matter, asked if there were any one Prophet of God to be found, of whome they might séeke counsell. Achab answered: There is (quoth he) yet a certaine man by whom we might enquire of the Lorde, but I hate him, for he doth not prophecie good vnto me, but euill, his name is Micheas. Iosaphat thought good in any wise to heare him. Wherefore the king presently sent for him by one of his Chamberlaines. And thus the messenger spake vnto him. All the Prophets with one voice, prophecie good lucke vnto the king, I pray thée therefore, that thou speake nothing to the contrary. When he was nowe brought before the two kings sitting in their thrones, clad with sumptuous apparell, and before the other Prophets, which stood in their presence, king Achab asked him, whether they should make warres against *Ramoth Gilead*, or no? Vnto whom he scoffingly answered: go (saith he) thou shalt haue prosperous successe. The king

3 *Reg.* 22.

who

who by the maner of his vtterance, vnderſtood he ſpake not in earneſt, inſtantly required him to tell him the truth. Wherevppon he ſaide: that he had ſéene all *Iſraell* diſperſed in the mountaines, as ſhéep without a ſhepheard, and that the Lorde had ſaide: Theſe men haue no Lorde, let euery one returne home to his owne houſe in ſafetie. Then ſaide Achab, Did I not tell thée, that this fellow doth prophecie me no good? The Prophet went on, ſaying: Yeare the word of God: I ſawe the Lord ſitting in his ſeate of maieſtie, and all the hoſte of heauen ſtande about him on his right hande, and on his lefte hande. And the Lorde ſaide, Who ſhall entice Achab that he may go and fall at *Ramoth Gilead*. And one ſaide on this manner, and an other ſaide on that manner. Then there came forth a ſpirit, and ſtode before the Lorde and ſaide, I will entice him. And the Lorde ſaide vnto him, wherewith? And he ſaide, I will goe out and be a falſe ſpirite in the mouth of all his Prophets. Then he ſaide, thou ſhalt entice him, and ſhalt alſo preuaile: go forth and do ſo. Now therefore beholde, the Lord hath put a lying ſpirite in the mouth of all theſe thy Prophets, and the Lorde hath appointed euill againſt thée. Then Sedechias came neare and ſmote Micheas on the chéeke, and ſaide: when went the ſpirit of the Lord from me, to ſpeake vnto thée? And Micheas prophecied what ſhould happen alſo vnto him. So the king commaunded him to be caſt into priſon, and to be fed with bread and water vntil he returned from the wars. Then ſaide Micheas, If thou returne in peace, the Lorde hath not ſpoken by me: and therewith he willed all all the people to hearken what he ſpake. Notwithſtanding the kings went forward with their enterpriſe, and prepared themſelues, and led forth their armies againſt their enemies. Achab was ſlaine in the battaile: Ioſaphat becauſe he ioyned himſelfe with the wicked, was in very great daunger, &c.

I haue handled this history somewhat at large, that we might vnderstand, how God by his iust iudgement sendeth spirites vnto those which despise his word, whereby they may be beguiled and deceiued.

The very same happened vnto the Christians after the Apostles time. For when the word of God began to be lesse esteemed than it should haue bene, and men preferred their owne affections before the hearing thereof: and when as they would incurre no maner of daunger, for the defence of their faith, and of the truth, but accounted of all religions alike, God so punished them, that now they began to giue eare vnto false teachers, whiche framed themselues vnto their vaine affections, they learned of images, whom they called Lay-mens bookes, they kissed these mens bones, and shrined them in golde (if happily they were their boanes) whose doctrine before they disdained to receiue: they gaue credit vnto false apparitions and diuellish visions: and so suffered they worthie punishment for their great ingratitude. Euen as yong men, which will not be ruled by their maisters, are after compelled to obey other men with great shame: so also happened it vnto those men: for they fel daily more and more from the word of God, in so much that when they had once lost the truthe, some ranne one way, and some an other, to finde a meanes for the remission of their sinnes: and one man beléeued this spirite, an other that, which no man can deny.

Rom.1. The like chaunced vnto the Gentiles in times past, as it appeareth by the first chap. to the Romanes, and also by their owne writings. They worshipped many gods, many miracles were shewed amongst them: they had many visions of gods, and many oracles: which when the Apostles began to preach, all ceased. *Athanasius.* S. Athanasius in his booke De humanitate verbi. Fol. 55. and 64. writeth, that in auncient time there were oracles at *Delphos* in *Bœotia*, *Lycia*, and other places which hee nameth: but nowe since Christ is preached

preached euery where vnto all men, this madneſſe hath ceaſed, &c. In the like maner writeth Lactantius and others. But in theſe our dayes, ſince we haue refuſed mens traditions, and willingly imbraced the doctrine of the Goſpell, all appearings of ſoules and ſpirits haue quite vaniſhed away.

Who (I pray you) heareth now of any ſoule or ſpirit, which doth wander, and as they call it, craue mens deuotions? Thoſe rumblings of ſpirits in the night, are now muche more ſildome heard than they haue bene in times paſt.

CHAP. II.

What the cauſe is that in theſe our dayes ſo fewe ſpirites are ſeene or heard.

THe cleare light of Gods word driueth away all ſuch ſpirits, which vſe to worke their feates in the darke. The cleare light approaching, the ſhadow & darkeneſſe vaniſheth. The prince of darkneſſe ſhunneth light, and hath nothing to do where men worſhip God the Father, only through Jeſu Chriſt, beléeuing only on him, and committing themſelues wholy vnto his protection. If men eſteem the word of God, and haue it in price, he will in no wiſe ſuffer them to be ſo ouerſéene and deceiued, as they are which do all things without the warrant of his word.

Here I cannot ouerpaſſe with ſilence a certaine merry ieſt: when once there chaunced to be talke in a certaine place of viſions and ſpirites, a certaine profeſſour of the Goſpell ſaide vnto a Papiſt in this maner: You ought (quoth he) euen by this to gather, that our religion is true, and youres falſe, for that ſince the Goſpell was preached vnto vs, very fewe ſpirits haue bin ſeene of any man.

To

To whome the other made aunſwere by way of reaſoning called Violentum: Nay (ſaith hée) hereby ye may gather, that your religion is naught, and ours good: for the diuell aſſaulteth thoſe, whome he feareth will ſhortly reuolte from him.

A ſtorie of S. Benedict, ſeing many diuels in a monaſtery and fewe in the market.

It is not much vnlike whiche Æneas Siluius (who was afterwardes made Pope, called Pius. 2.) reciteth in his Hiſtorie of the Counceil of *Baſill*, out of the liſe of holy Benedict, father of the Monkes called after his name. Hée ſometimes viſiting a certaine Monaſterie of holy men, eſpyed an infinite route of diuels, who as it were fighting with the holy fathers, laboured to diſturbe the good workes which they went about. And he forthwith going to a faire full of marchandiſe and buying and ſelling, ſawe there but one diuell, and he alſo idle and ſad, ſitting vppon a watchtoure, whereat ſaint Benedict marueiling, that he ſaw the place which was holy and dedicate to prayer, full of diuels, and that he founde the prophane place which was occupied with periurie and other offences, guarded but with one Diuell: coniures the ſame Diuell to declare and ſhewe vnto him the true cauſe thereof: who ſtraight anſwered him, that it was néedfull the holy place ſhoulde be aſſaulted by many diuels, but thoſe which ſinned of their voluntarie accorde, had no néede to bée deceiued by the Diuell.

But I aſke thée this queſtion O thou Papiſt, mighte not the Gentils in ancient time haue obiected the ſame to the Chriſtians, when they demaunded of them why their Oracles ceaſſed: and why there were ſo fewe Viſions? If thoſe Spirites or bugges be Diuels, why doe you then ſaye and beléeue that they are the ſoules of deade menne, whiche deſire helpe of you? I will ſhewe you the verye true cauſe why thoſe viſions are nowe ſo ſeldome times ſéene: forſoothe becauſe the Diuell perceiueth, that wée vnderſtande his ſubtilties and craft, therefore hée hunteth

hunteth after other men, and seeketh to deceiue them. As for example, when thou wilt crampe some man by the toes in the night time (as sometimes pleasant fellowes vse to do, to recreate themselues when they trauell) and so drawe him out of his bedde, if thou perceiue he bee acquainted with thy sleight, by and by thou leauest him, and goest vnto [illegible] which is fast a sleep, and cannot perceiue the deceit.

There be other causes also why these things happen more seldome. If any man deceiue thee once, twice, or thrise, afterwards thou openest thy eyes, and espiest what he doth and what he goeth about: so when we haue bene often beguiled with false apparitions, we will not easily be perswaded, if any man tell vs that a soule or spirite hath appeared (as the prouerbe saith,) Burnt childe, dreads fire. Moreouer, whereas now adayes fewe stand in feare of spirits, many might be easily found, who would seek them, feele them, yea and also handle them. This is well knowne, and therefore no man will gladly put on a visor, or otherwise counterfeit himselfe to be a ghost. A man may soone persuade a childe that there is a black man, a tall woman, which will put children that cry in their budget, &c. but after they are come to maturitie of yeares, they will no more bee feared with visours and such like persuasions: they will laugh at thy follie, if afterwards thou goe about to make them so afraide. Euen so when we were children in the scriptures, that is, when we vnderstood them not, we might be easily seduced to beleeue many things: But nowe that we reade them in all manner of tongues, and do daily profit in them, we do not suffer our selues to be so mocked, neither do we beleeue euery vaine apparition. How many sights of spirits did the knauerie of the Monkes of *Berna* driue away, after it was once detected? Things are set vp in the fields to feare away the birdes, which at the last also they perceiue to be but trifles, and are not driuen away any longer with suche toyes. What maruel is it then, if after so great a shipwrack

A burnt child dreads fire.

of godlineſſe and truth, men albeit they are ſimple, do at the laſt open their eyes.

CHAP. III.

Why God doth ſuffer ſtraunge noyſes, or extraordinarie rumblings to bee heard before ſome notable alterations or otherwiſe.

IN that there happeneth certaine ſtraunge things before the death of men, and alſo before notable alterations, and deſtructions of countries, as marueilous crackes, and terrible roaring, ſurely it turneth to good vnto the iuſt, and to further damnation to the wicked. For by theſe means God ſheweth that nothing commeth to paſſe by chance, or by aduenture, but that the life and death, the proſperous or vnfortunate eſtate of al men, is in the power and hand of God. It is nothing ſo as the Epicures affirme, that God hath no regard whether any man liue, or be borne, or do well or euill, or otherwiſe, or whether commō wealths do floriſh, or be made waſte. Chriſt himſelf teacheth vs, that not ſo much as a ſparrow falleth vnto the grounde without the will of God. Salomon and Daniel ſay, that the hearts of kings are in Gods hands, and that he appointeth or depoſeth kings at his pleaſure. Wherfore if we happily do heare any noiſes or ſuch like, they ought rather to put vs in good comfort, thā to make vs afraide. And againe, God hereby admoniſheth vs, that we be not idle and ſecure, for he hath in all ages ſtirred vp his ſeruants, not only with word, but alſo with rare and ſtraunge apparitions. The very Gentiles accounted theſe miraculous things, as the admonitions and warnings of their gods, as it may be ſeen euery where, in their hiſtories. And albeit it be very likely, that moſt of theſe things happen by the diuels procurement, yet neuertheleſſe, we herein perceiue Almightie God his fatherly care, loue, and preſeruatiō of vs againſt ẏ deuiſes of the diuel. For albeit the diuel take no reſt, but is alwayes in readineſſe to deſtroy vs,

vs, yet can he not hurt vs, so long as God kéepeth watche and defendeth vs. The wicked who despise the preaching of Gods word, are sore terrified with these things, in so much that they not knowing whither to turne themselues, are constrained to confesse, that God doth gouerne all mens actions, and that there are good and euil spirits. Otherwise they coulde in no case be repressed, but that they would do greater mischiefe vnto the faithfull, except God by these meanes did cast feare vppon them, and as it were with a snaffle or bridle, did hale and drawe them backe.

CHAP. IIII.

After what sort they should behaue themselues, whiche see good or euil spirits, or meete with other straunge aduentures: and first how Iewes and Gentiles behaued themselues in the like cases.

That we may rightly vnderstand how we ought to behaue our selues, if any thing either good or euill, appeare vnto vs, we wil first declare how the Gentiles and Iewes vsed themselues in like cases. Amongst the Gentiles, not only those wandring spirits beare men in hand that they were mens soules, but also shewed what were good and expedient for them to do for their sake, to wit, that they should do sacrifices for their soules, obserue their obsequies, burie their bodies, erect Temples, make holy dayes, and such like stuffe. Suetonius writeth, that the Emperor Caligule his bodie was priuily conueyed into the gardeins called *Lamiam*, and there with a hastie fire being but halfe consumed, was cast into a pit, and couered with a litle earth. But afterwards, whē his sisters returned from exile, it was taken vp, and thorowly burnt, and afterward solemnly buried. But before they had so done, the gardē kéepers were very much troubled with appearing of spirites. And moreouer, no man could passe any night in the same house where he was slaine, without some great feare, vntil such time as the house was vtterly destroyed with fire.

What the Gētiles did when they sawe spirits.

Suetonius.

We read also in other writers, that the ghostes of them which were not orderly buried, or whose accustomed rites and ceremonies in the time of warres were omitted, did appeare either to their friendes or vnto others, complayning and intreating that their funerals, and all other ceremonies might be obserued for their sake: whereof came the hearses, wækemindes, monthminds, and anniuersaries, whereof we reade many things in the Ethnike writers, and many things are recited out of the olde Poets, and in Lilius Giraldus, in his booke *De sepultura*, and also in Polid. Virgilius *De Inuentione rerum. lib. 6. cap.* 10. We haue shewed before in the second part and first Chapter, that some haue desired others, that they might bee buried after that they were dead. Cicero writeth in his 1. booke *De legibus*, that Romulus the first founder of *Rome*, walking after his death not farre from Atticus house, appeared vnto Iulius Proculus, and told him that he was now a god, and that his name was *Quirinus*, and therwith commanded that there should be a Temple erected and dedicated vnto him in the same place.

Septimæ Tricesimæ Anniuersaria.

Lilius Giraldus.

Cicero.

Ouid writeth *Lib. 4. Fastorum*, that Remus appeared in the night time vnto Fastulus, and to his wife Accia Laurentia, sometime his Nurse, complaining vnto them of his miserable death, and desiring them to make laboure, that the same day wherein he was slaine, might bee accounted amongst their holy dayes. The people of *Rome* (as Ouid witnesseth, *Lib. 2. Fastorum*) kept a feast in the moneth of Frebruarie called *Feralia*, in the which they did sacrifice vnto the infernall goddes, and those whose duties it was to celebrate the funeralls of their Auncestors, carried dishes of meat to their sepulchers. Whereof Fastus and Varro called the same feast by the name of *Feralia*. These dishes of meate were set vpon a stone, at the time of these sacrifices: for the which cause, as Seruius saith, they were called *Silicernium*, by the which word some will haue a certaine

Ouid.

Feralia.

certaine feast signified, which is bestowed vppon old men. Donatus sayth, that *Silicernium* is a supper, which is made to the infernall Gods, because *Eam silentes cernant*, that is, the deade soules do receiue it, or because those that doe serue it, do onely *cernere*, see it, and not taste thereof, &c. There were also certaine holie feastes called *Parentalia*, in the which meate was carried to the Sepulchers, for the soules of Parents and Auncestours before deceased. And albeit they suppose, that soules were pleased with small giftes, as of milke, wine, and such like, whereof mention is made in Ouid, yet notwithstanding they also killed sacrifices, whereof some suppose that *Feralia* toke their name, *à feriendis pecudibus*, of killing sheepe. Vnto their sacrifices they also added prayers, and kindled lightes. When in times past the Romanes being troubled with warres, had let passe the feast of *Parentalia*, they therefore supposed (that the infernall Goddes being for the same cause angrie) there arose stormes and pestilence, and that soules rising out of their graues, did wander with pittifull complaintes about the graues, and by the highway sides, and in the fieldes. This feaste endured by the space of fiftéene dayes, in the whiche married women lay not with their husbandes, neither those whiche were marriageable did marrie, and the Images of their Goddes were couered. The soules of them that were dead, when they came to the meate, they wandred about the graues, and were fed (as they thought) with the banquet. Parentalia.

In the moneth of May, there was holden a feast in the night time, which at the beginning they called *Remuria*, and afterwardes *Lemuria*. This did not differ much from the feaste called *Feralia*, whiche was instituted to pacifie soules. Touching the originall of them, and the rytes belonging therto, loke Ouid in his *Lib. 5. Fastorum*. One who toke on him to pacifie the soules, arose in the night verie late, he went barefooted, and washed himselfe ouer with Lemuria. Ouid.

fresh springing water, and then taking beanes whiche he had rolled in his mouth, he threw them behinde his backe, and said, that with them he did redéeme himselfe, and after beating on a peece of braſſe, he prayed the soules to depart from thence: which thing if they had done nine times, they thought they had ended their holy seruice. These were celebrated by the space of three dayes. The sacrifices which are done for the infernall gods, are called *Inferiæ*.

We reade in Lucan, of the soules of Sylla and Marius, which were purged by sacrifice. We shewed before how Athanagoras commanded the bones which were digged vp in the entrie of his house at *Athens*, to bee orderly buried againe. &c.

Touching the Iewes behauiour.

The auncient Iewes had an expresse commandement of God, not to bee any thing moued with the miracles of false Prophets, and God in plaine words forbad them, not to séeke counsel of dead bodies. Saule in the beginning of his raigne, while he yet gaue himselfe vnto godlinesse, vtterly destroyed all Coniurers and Witches. I do not remember that I haue euer heard or read, how the Iewes behaued themselues when any spirits appeared vnto them: yet I doubt not but that they are superstitious as well in these things, as in all others.

CHAP. V.

How Christian men ought to behaue themselues when they see Spirites, and first that they ought to haue a good courage, and to be stedfast in faith.

HOwe Christian menne oughte to behaue themselues in this behalfe, it is fully and amply declared in the holie Scriptures, in like manner as all other things are, whiche appertaine vnto our saluation. To wit, that first we ought to be of good courage

courage without feare, being assured and constante in true faith.

For if they be good Angels which shew themselues vnto vs, then are they sent vnto vs from God, to a good ende and purpose. But if they be wicked and euill, they can do vs no harme be they neuer so desirous, excepte God giue them leaue thereto. If it be nothing but a vaine imagination that we haue, or an idle sight obiected vnto our eies, surely it is great follie to be any thing afraid. Indeed it is naturall vnto vs, to be amazed with feare when we see suche things: for very godly menne, as we read both in the olde and newe Testament, were stricken with exceeding feare when they sawe good Angels, but yet a man must pull vp his heart againe. When Christes Disciples sawe their Maister walking vpon the water, and approching neare the shippe, they thought they sawe a spirite, and they were astonished, and cried out through feare. But the Lorde saide vnto them, be of good comforte, it is I, be not afraide.

The like is reade in the foure and twentie Chapter of Saint Luke, when he appeared vnto them after his resurrection, and sawe that they were maruellously afraid. Matthew the 10. Feare not saithe Christ, those whiche slay the bodie, but cannot kill the soule, but rather stande in awe of him, who can cast both bodie and soule into hell fire. The Diuell would like it well, if we would alwaies stand in feare of him. *Luke.24.* *Matth.10.*

Be not dismaide, although thou heare some spirit stir and make a noise, for in case hee rumble onely to make thee afraide, care not for him, but lette him rumble so long as he will, for if he see thee without feare, hee will soone depart from thee. And if thou thinke good, thou maiest boldly say vnto him, get thee hence with a mischiefe thou wicked Diuell, thou hast nothing to do with me, who haue sette my onely beleefe in Christ Iesu my Sauiour.

I am

I am owner of this house, and not thou, vnto whome there is an other place appointed. &c. If he perceiue ỹ there is no feare or dreade of him, and that his bustling is not estéemed, he will not continue long time. I will make this matter manifest with a similitude, which is well knowne. There be certaine men, which if they thinke other men stande in feare of them, they make wise to drawe their swoorde; and sometimes two they draw it, and strike the stones therewith, chasing and swearing lustily: But if they knowe their aduersaries haue a good courage, and that (if néede require) they will fight it out stoutly, they will quickly put vp their swoorde into their scabberde. In like manner, if the Diuill sée thou art of a good stomacke, and well armed with Gods woorde, he will sone séeke after others whome he may mocke with feare.

But if it please God to exercise thée by the Deuill for a certaine time, as he did sometime Iob, thou must patiently suffer all things which he laieth vppon thée, and that willingly for Gods commaundement sake. And knowe thou well, that he cannot thus much hurt, neither thy goods, nor bodie, nor soule, without the permissiõ and sufferance of Almightie God: if God giue him leaue to plague thy bodie, thinke with thy selfe howe so euer it be done, that God hath so done for thy profitte and commoditie, who also sendeth grieuous sicknesses vppon other men, by other meanes & instruments, or else doth exercise them with other kindes of calamities. Be therefore strong and constant in faith, yet lette euery one beware of boldnesse, temeritie, and headdie rashnesse.

Christ hath conquered the diuel. *Luke* 11. *Iohn*. 12. 16.

Let it comforte thée, that thou knowest Christe hath conquired the Deuill, as he himselfe teacheth in the eleuenth chapter of Luke, by the example of a strong man at armes. In the 12. & 16. of John he saith: the Prince of this woorlde shalbe cast out of the doores, that is to say, out of the hearts of them which cleaue to the woorde of God, and are not in

loue

loue with the world, whereof he is prince and ruler. For he hath power ouer such, which do grædily loue the world.

In the first of Iohn the third chapter, it is saide: The sonne of man appeared, that is, came into the world for that cause, that he might destroy the workes of the diuel. There are many miracles in the Gospell which shewe that Christ cast out diuels. Albeit God for a time do suffer the diuel in many things, yet hath he appointed him his bounds, which he may not passe. And he doth not suffer the faithfull to be tempted any more of him than they are able to endure. He giueth his grace plentuously vnto them, vpon whome he laieth great afflictions. 1. *Iohn.* 3.

We ought not to maruel if spirits sometimes be séen or heard. For as Saint Peter saith: Sathan raungeth euery where, in houses, fieldes, water and fire: and yet he is not alwayes espied of men, neither can he so bee, except God giue him leaue to shewe himselfe. In that that we doe alwayes sée him (for he being of an inuisible nature, taketh on him diuers shapes) or heare him, we haue to thanke the goodnesse of almightie God: for otherwise we should not be in rest one moment of time. But if sometime wicked spirits méete with vs in a visible forme by the will of God, or do otherwise trouble and disquiet our houses, we must not think therfore that they were neuer in house before. The diuel is conuersant among men.

CHAP. VI.

It behoueth them which are vexed with spirites, to pray especially, and to giue themselues to fasting, sobrietie, watching, and vpright and godly liuing.

NOw because good Angelles appeare vnto vs more seldome in this oure time (for there is a verie greate difference of men liuing vnder the newe Testament, from them that liue vnder the olde, vnto whom God many and oftentimes sent his Angels)

and that euill angels very often appeare, we ought the rather to commit our selues more diligently to the tuition of almightie God, both when we go to bed, and also when we arise againe.

Our Sauiour amongst all other things, taught vs to pray to this purpose: Deliuer vs from euill. And moreouer he saith in the 17. Chapter of Matthew, that some kinde of diuels are not driuen away by any other kinde of meanes than fasting and praying. As touching those which suppose that diuels ought to be cast out with coniurations, and execrable cursings, I will entreat in the end of this my booke. Watch and pray, least ye fall into temptation. Matthew 26. And in the 22. of Luke, Christ saith vnto Peter, Sathan hath desired to sift you euen as corne, but I haue praied that thy faith faile not. And euen at this present also he maketh intercession for vs sitting at the right hand of his heauenly father.

The auncient Fathers in olde time, call vppon God in all their daungers and troubles, whereof it were a needlesse matter to auouch many examples. It is also very profitable and good to craue the prayers of the whole congregation, whensoeuer we are vexed with euill spirites and vaine fantasies. For we know right well that the prayers of the Church haue bene very profitable and effectuall vnto others, and that the godly in their distresses haue euermore desired them.

It is Gods pleasure, that the faithfull should succour one an other with their good prayers. Howbeit that the Saintes after their departure from hence, should pray for vs, that we should in any wise desire their prayers, surely there is no commandement of God, or any example thereof in the holy scriptures.

Moreouer, the Apostles teach vs to withstand the craft and subtiltie of the diuell by this meanes. Saint Paule to the Ephesians the 6. Chapter, and Peter in his first Epistle

and fifth Chapter saith: Be ye sober and watche, for your aduersary the diuel, as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure: whom resist stedfast in faith, &c. *Ephe.6.* *1 Pet.5.*

When men are secure and negligent, wholly giuen vnto pleasures, and as it were drowned in surfetting, couetousnesse, adulterie, and such other wickednesse, then hath the diuel place to shewe himselfe. Wherefore we ought to giue our selues to watching, praying, fasting, and godly liuing: we must heare the word of God often and gladly, we must desire to reade and talke of him continually, that we may thereby put from vs those diuellishe illusions and sightes. We must fight against the diuel with good life.

If thou haue any publike office or charge, do it faithfully: restore thy goods euil gotten, either vnto their true owners, or else imploy them to some good and godly ende. If men care neither for God, nor his word, it is no maruell if vaine sightes appeare vnto them. For God suffereth such things to happen vnto them, to humble them and to make them know themselues.

It is an horrible thing, that there are some which giue ouer themselues to the diuel, because he should not torment them: they ought rather to weigh with themselues, that if they so do, they shall be perpetually tormented of euil spirits, except they truly repent and turne againe to God.

CHAP. VII.

That spirits which vse to appeare, ought to be iustly suspected: and that we may not talke with them, nor enquire any thing of them.

WE ought not without great cause to suspecte all spirites, and other apparitions. For albeit God doth vse the helpe and seruice of good Angels,

for the preseruation of his elect, yet notwithstanding in these our dayes they appeare vnto vs very seldome. For things are nowe farre otherwise since Christes comming into the worlde, than they were before in auncient time. Although perchaunce thou thinke thou hast seene a good Angell, yet do not easily and vnaduisedly giue him credite. If the euent of the matter declare afterward, that it was a good Angell, which gaue thee notable warning of some matter, or deliuered thee out of some great dangers: giue God thankes that he hath dealt so fatherly and mercifully with thee, and hath suche care ouer thee, and endeuour to frame thy selfe to his wil and pleasure. But if thou see an Angell whiche flattereth and speaketh thee faire, suche a one as those are whiche craue thy helpe, (as thou hast heard before) in no wise credite their wordes. When which blaunche and flatter with vs, are alwayes suspitious, why then should not such spirites be suspected? Enter into no communication with such spirites, neither aske them what thou must giue, or what thou must do, or what shall happen hereafter. Aske them not who they are, or why they haue presented themselues to bee seene or heard. For if they be good, they will like it well, that thou wilt heare nothing but the word of God: but if they be wicked, they will endeuour to deceiue thee with lying. When the Angell in the first Chapter of Matthew, instructed Ioseph in a dreame, he by and by alleaged testimony out of the prophet. If it be so, that we must not beleeue an Angell comming from heauen, who can iustly blame vs, if we giue no credite to spirits and suspitious dreames? Although Christ and his Apostles had the full power to shew miracles, yet did they establish and confirme their doctrine by the holie scriptures.

Matth.1.

When Almightie God himselfe had enquired of Adam in Paradice, touching the breaking of his Commaundement, and that he had layde the fault vpon his wife Eua,

and

and she had put it ouer to the Serpent, which caused her to eate of the forbidden frute, God woulde not demaund of the Serpent, that is, of the Diuell, (whiche had vsed him as an instrument) why he had so done, for he knewe right well that he was a lyer. Except Eue had talked with the Serpent, she had neuer transgressed Gods Commandement.

If Spirites of their owne accorde woulde gladly tell vs many thinges: yet wee must not giue eares vnto them, much lesse ought we to coniure them to tell vs the truthe. God commaunded in his lawe, (as wee haue oftentimes said before) that no man should enquire any thing of the dead.

God himselfe sent his faithfull seruants, the Prophets, Apostles, Euangelists, and especially his onely begotten sonne Christ Iesu our Lord and Sauiour into the worlde, by whome he truly and plentifully taught his faithfull seruants what they ought to beleeue, to do, to leaue vndon, and what kinde of worshipping did best please him, with many other such things. By them he enformed vs concerning great and waighty affaires, which should happen in his Churche, and in kingdomes, euen vnto that blessed day wherein Christ shall iudge the world, and shall call togither his generall Councell, and shall pronounce finall sentence vppon them who haue done well or ill, and wherein he shall make a diuision and separation betweene the good and euil. God hath alwayes giuen vs teachers.

Christ himselfe after his Resurrection did not immediately ascend into heauen, but abode a while in earth, appearing vnto his Disciples and others, least we should at any time say: Who euer came again to tell vs what estate is to be looked for in the other world?

Moreouer, God among suche great and long persecutions, wherein many profitable bookes haue perished, hath miraculously preserued the holy Scriptures for our pro- God hath preserued the scriptures.

site, euen vnto this day, and hereafter will preserue them in despite of all impious and wicked men.

God hath instituted the holy ministerie.

He hath also ordeyned the ministerie of the worde, that vnto the ende of the worlde, there shoulde be some men, whiche bothe by liuely voyce, and also by their writings, shoulde interprete his worde, and enfourme others of his will and pleasure. His word is a shining lanterne, which shineth in this darke worlde, which is full of errours, as we reade Psalm. 119. And our sauiour saith in the eight chapter of Saint Iohn, that he is the light of the world, whome if any man follow, he walketh not in darkenesse.

Psalme. 119. *Iohn.* 8.

This standeth as a sure grounde: wherefore no other reuelations are to be loked for, neither by myracles from Heauen, nor by wandring spirites or soules, as the common people misterme them. But lette vs imagine, that they are the wandring spirites of deade bodies, then is it necessarie, that they be the soules, either of faithfull men, or of infidels. If they be the soules of the faithfull, they will say with God the father concerning his sonne Christe Iesus, *Heare him.* But if they be the soules of Infidels and of wicked men, who I pray you, will vouchsafe to heare them, or beleeue any thing they say? Moreouer those things whiche these counterfeite soules do speake, eyther agree with the holy Scriptures, or else are contrary vnto them. If they are agreeable, then are they to be receiued, not because spirits speake them, but because they are comprysed in the word of God. But in case they are repugnant to the worde of God, they ought in no wise to be receiued, albeit an Angell from Heauen vtter them. Thou wilt not beleeue a man of thy familiar acquaintaunce, otherwise worthy of credite, who sounde of bodie and soule, nowe liueth togither with thee, if hee affirme any thing which thou knowest to be contrary to the holy Scriptures: why then wouldest thou beleeue a spirite which thou

doest

doest not knowe? In ciuill causes the euidence or witnesse of dead men is reiected, why then in causes of religion shuld we giue care to the testimonie of runagate and wandring spirites.

It is no harde or difficulte matter for the Lorde oure God to sende his Angels vnto vs, whome otherwise hée vseth for our profite, and by them to instructe vs in the Faith: but it hath pleased him to appoint the matter otherwise.

Wée reade in the tenth chapter of the Actes, that by an Angell he commaunded Cornelius to sende for Peter, that he might instruct him in the faith. He mighte haue commaunded the Angell to teache Cornelius, but he followed an orderly meanes. It shalbe best for vs therfore to stand to the holy Scriptures simply, and that all appearing of spirites, as also all dreames and reuelations be tried by the holy Scriptures, as vpon a touchstone, and so to admit nothing but that which is set forth in the holy Scriptures: for except we go thus warely to worke, there is greate daunger least wee bée deceiued. If the auncient Fathers had so done, they had not estrayed so farre from the Apostles simplicitie. *Acts.10.*

S. Augustine in his third booke and.6. chapter, writing againste the letters of Petilianus saieth thus: If concerning Christe, or any other thing, whiche appartayneth to faith and euerlasting life, (I will not say, we: for comparing with him that said: Albeit that wée) but simply, whereas he going on, sayd: If an Angell from Heauen shall teache you any thing besides that whiche you haue receiued in Scriptures conteining the law and the Gospel, bée he accursed. S. Augustines counsell. Scripture to be only beloued.

S. Chrisostom vnto the Epistle to the Galathians the firste chapter: Abraham (saith he) when he was desired to send Lazarus, said: They haue Moises and the prophets, if they will not heare them, they will not giue eare vnto them Chrisostome aduise.

them which rise vp from the dead. And when he bring in Christ vttering these words, he sheweth howe he woulde haue the holy scriptures more worthy of credite than any raised from the dead. S. Paule (when I name Paule, I name likewise Christ, for he stirred vp his mind) preferreth the Scriptures before Angels descending from Heauen, and that for very iust cause. For albeit Angels are great, yet are they seruants and ministers. For all holy scriptures were not commaunded to be written and sent vnto vs by seruants, but by almightie God ẏ Lord of all things. Thus write these two holy fathers.

All things necessarie to saluation are cõteined in the scriptures.

What things soeuer are necessarie for vs to know, are conteined in the holy scriptures: those things which are not expressed in them, we must not curiously enquire of, as things profitable for our saluation. Who will therefore say against the commaundement of God, that these things are to be sought and learned of dead men, and by diuellish visions? These things which are secret and hidden, we shall throughly see when we come to eternall life. May not God, if we be not content with his holy word, say that vnto vs, which sometimes he spake by the mouth of Helias vnto the messengers of king Ochosias. Is there no God in *Israell*, that you now go to Accaron to aske counsell of Belzebub? Yea Thomas Aquinas denieth that diuels are to be heard, whiche deceiue simple menne, feyning themselues to be the soules of dead men: and by that coleure especially terrifie menne, whiche sometimes also happened vnto the Gentiles.

If it were certaine and sure that the Diuell coulde not appeare and deceiue menne, and also shewe greate and straunge miracles, then perchaunce some men would thinke that we shoulde giue eare vnto such Spirites: but nowe we see the contrary happen. An euill spirite cloaketh his errours vnder the coloure of diuine seruice, and vnder the pretence of religiõ, he endeuoureth to ouerthrow religion.

religion. For as S. Hierome saith, the diuell sheweth not himselfe with all his deceits, that he may be knowne what he is. And therefore it behoueth vs to be very circumspect and warie. Hierom.

Moreouer, miracles are onely testimonies and seales of the word, neither may any thing be approued by them, which is repugnant to the word of God. All miracles which lead vs away from our Creator vnto creatures, and do attribute that vnto our workes, which is onely due vnto the merites of Christ: and to be short, all those which induce vs any wayes into errour, are to be eschewed. If we must needs beléeue these appearing soules, no man could be assured of his estate: for new things should be continually deuised, as we sée plainly it happened in the olde time. Therefore we must let passe all maner of spirits, and embrace true religion, and therein constantly abide. Miracles are seales of the word.

CHAP. VIII.

Testimonies out of holie Scripture, and one example whereby it is prooued, that such kinde of apparitions are not to be credited, and that we ought to bee verie circumspect in them.

That wee ought not by and by to beléeue all thinges which we heare, not onely experience and many common Prouerbes, but also the holy Scriptures teach vs, especially in cases concerning our saluation, touching the which thing, we will alledge only a fewe places and examples.

When Christ first sent abroad his Disciples to preach the Gospell, he said vnto them, Matthew 10. Be yée wise as Serpents, and simple as Doues, beware of men: howe much more than ought we to take heede of diuels? Christ prophecieth in the 24. of Matthew, that many false teachers *Mat.* 10. *Mat.* 24.

shall come in the latter daies, and shall shewe straunge myracles to confirme their errours, and therefore hée commaundeth the faithfull, to be hédefull and circumspect, and not without cause hé addeth: Beholde I haue tolde you before. Sainte Paule to the Galathians the firste Chapter, saith in greate earnest vnto them, that if an Angell come from Heauen, and preache vnto them any other Gospell, hé shoulde be accursed. Euen so, if at this time spirites appeare, and doe vtter any thinge repugnant to the Doctrine of the Apostles and Prophets, they are to be reiected. The Apostle in his firste Epistle and fourth Chapter to Timothie, dothe prophecie of false teachers whiche shoulde come, and saithe, the spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall departe from the faithe, and shall giue hédde vnto spirits of errour and doctrines of Deuils, whiche speake lies through hipocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with an hote yron, forbidding to marrie, and commaunding to abstayne from meates which God hath created to be receiued with gyuing thankes of them whiche beléeue, and knowe the truth. &c. By the worde (spirite) are vnderstoode false teachers, whiche vaunt themselues of the spirite of God: But what cause is there, why it may not be vnderstoode of suche wandring spirites, which haue induced men to take in hande many things? In the seconde Epistle to the Thessalonians, and the seconde Chapter, when certaine affirmed the latter daye to be presente at hande, Paule foretelleth them, that there shall be a defection, and that Antichrist shall first come, saying: Nowe we beséech you brethren by the comming of our Lorde Iesus Christe, by our assembling vnto him, that yée be not sodenly moued from your intent, nor troubled, neither by spirits, nor by word, nor by letter, as it were from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hande. Let no man deceiue you by any meanes. &c. Whiche wordes truly in my iudgement may

1. Tim. 4.

2. Thess. 2.

also

also be verie aptly vnderstood of those wandering spirites. Saint Iohn saith in his first Epistle and fourth Chapter: 1. *Iohn.* 4. Dearly beloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but trie the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophettes are gone out into the worlde. Hereby shall ye knowe the spirit of God. Euery spirit that confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God, and euery spirite whiche confesseth not, that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God. &c. Here he speaketh not of spirites which falsly affirme themselues to be mens soules, but of those teachers whiche boaste of themselues that they haue the spirite of God. But in case we must not beleeue them being aliue, much lesse ought we to credite them when they are dead. And albeit that neyther Christe nor his Apostles, had so diligently giuen vs warning, not to suffer our selues to be seduced with myracles, and with the talke of spirits, yet notwithstanding, daily experience teacheth vs to bee circumspect and warie in these cases. For assoone as false teachers see that they haue no testimonie of Scripture to defende themselues withall, by and by they turne themselues to spirites and visions, whereby they may confirme their doctrine, which thing hath opened a large windowe to many errors. To what inconuenience ambition, couetousnesse and enuie, hath brought many of the Clergie, it is both well knowne by many examples, and it hath also as it were by the way beene before declared. Haue not the orders of Monkes striued amongest themselues for the preheminence? haue not they inuented newe miracles? haue they not counterfeited gods, pilgrimages, saintes and spirits? The holy Virgin is a famous and notable example, that we shuld not rashly beleeue euery spirit. For at what time ỹ Angell Gabriel appeared vnto her in a visible shape, and saluted her, shewing her before of ỹ incarnatiõ of the sonne of God, she thought with her selfe, what maner of saluation that should be, how this thing could come to passe,

The holy virgin did not by & by beleeue the appearing of the Angell.

seeing she had knowne no man. Then at the last being enformed of the meanes by the Angell, she said: Behold the handmayd of the Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word. Why then should we beleeue euery spirite, especially those which teach things quite contrary to the word of God.

CHAP. IX.

After what sort the faithful in the primitiue Church, vsed themselues when they met with spirits.

I Haue declared out of the word of God, how good and godly men ought to behaue themselues, when soeuer any spirites appeare vnto them. And truly the auncient Christians behaued themselues after this sort. For they were couragious and without feare, they gaue themselues to godlinesse, and all good workes, they diligently auoyded all things which were displeasing vnto God: and they were also very circumspect, not to attribute too much vnto spirits and visions.

The signe of the Crosse. Tertullian.

It was a common custom amongst them, to blesse themselues with the signe of the Crosse, when they mette with these things, which many also vse at this day. Tertullian writeth in his booke *De corona militis*, that the auncient Christians did many times marke their foreheades with the signe of the Crosse. Hierome. S. Hierom exhorteth Demetriades, that he often crosse his forehead, least that the destroyer of *Egipt* finde any place therein. Origen. &c. Origen also, Epiphanius, Chrisostome, and Augustine, write many thinges of the vertue of the holie Crosse. Athanasius. S. Athanasius writeth in his booke *De Humanitate verbi, eiusque corporali aduentu. Fol.* 67. In times past (saith he) the diuels by vaine shewes, and mockerie, ensnared men, abiding sometimes in wels, sometime in riuers, in stones, and woods, and so by craftie deceytes, brought vnwise men into sottishnesse. But now we sings

ſince Gods woꝛd hath appeared vnto vs, ſuche ſightes and vaine fantaſies haue ſurceaſed. Fol. 56. and 72. and in other places alſo he handleth the ſame matter.

Lactantius wꝛiteth of the ſame in his fourth booke *Diuinarum Inſtitutionum* 26. Chapter, and alſo thꝛoughout the 27. Chapter. He ſaith that the diuel can haue no acceſſe vnto thoſe, noꝛ any wayes hurt them, which ſigne their foꝛeheads with the Croſſe. He addeth moꝛeouer, that the Chꝛiſtians vſed this ceremonie in old time, in caſting out diuels and healing diſeaſes.

Not foꝛ that they aſcribed ſuch efficacie and foꝛce to the exteꝛnall ſigne of the Croſſe, (foꝛ that were ſuperſtitious) but vnto the Croſſe, that is, to the merites of Chꝛiſte, whoſe woꝛthineſſe and excellencie, they called withall to their remembꝛance. Touching the holy Apoſtles, oꝛ Apoſtolike Churches, we reade not, that they euer vſed the ſigne of the Croſſe, in expelling diuels, in curing diſeaſes, oꝛ in any other thing. God ſpared the Iewes in *Egipt*, whiche marked the doꝛe poſtes with the bloude of the Lambe: not that Lambes bloude is able to deliuer men from death, but it was a figure of the bloud and paſſion of Chꝛiſt Ieſus. And the Iewes ſpꝛinkled not bloud of their owne good deuotion, as they terme it, but by the commandement of God. The holy Fathers by the ceremonie that they ſigned themſelues with the Croſſe, ment to teſtifie their confidence in the croſſe, that is, in the death of Chꝛiſt Ieſus, which abandoneth all euill and miſchiefe. The Diuell neuer a whit feareth the Croſſe, wherewith we ſigne our ſelues, noꝛ yet thoſe pieces and fragments of Chꝛiſtes Croſſe, which are ſhewed foꝛ reliques, but he trembleth at the power and foꝛce of Chꝛiſts death, by the which he was conquered and ouerthꝛowne. If any man attribute too much vnto ceremonies, he cannot be excuſed from ſuperſtition, which woꝛthily deſeꝛueth blame.

Whether the bare ſigne of the Croſſe haue anie force.

We read moꝛe in the auncient wꝛiters, that they vſed

Coniurations against diuels

exorcismes, or coniurations in the primatiue Churche against diuels.

Tertullian.

You may read in Tertullian in his booke *De anima*, that vncleane spirits haue oftentimes deceiued men, haue taken on them the persons of others, and haue fained themselues to be the soules of dead men, that men should not beleeue that all soules descended into Hell (what is to be vnderstood by the word Hell, I haue shewed before) and so to bring the beleefe of the latter iudgement of the resurrection of the dead, into doubt and question.

Moreouer, we reade that the olde Fathers haue cast diuels out of men, and out of such places wherein by their rumbling, they haue put many in horrible feare. Such an historie of Saint Iohn in Abdias Babylonius, for the holy Apostles, and many godly men after them, were endued with this grace from God, that they could cast out vnclean spirits: which gift continued a long season in the Church, to the great profit of the faithfull, but afterwards it ceased as other miracles did also. It maketh vnto this purpose, that Tertullian writeth in his Apologetico, Fol. 858. and 159.

Thus we haue sufficiently seene after what sort the holy Fathers and auncient christians behaued themselues when any spirits appeared vnto them.

CHAP. X.

That sundrie kindes of superstition haue crept in, whereby men haue attempted to driue away spirits.

IN proces of time, superstitions encreased more & more. 2. *Thess.* 2. Paule complaineth, that in his time Antichrist beganne to practise his mysterie of iniquitie, and that many opinions and sects beganne to spring vp. 1. *Iohn.* 4. Saint Iohn writeth, that in his time, there were many Antichristes. What

maruell

maruel is it then, if afterwards, yea and that verie quickly, diuers errours croape into the Churche, and multiplyed exceedingly?

Sainte Auguſtine in his 22. booke *De ciuitate Dei*, and eighte Chapter, after that hee hadde recited certaine miracles, whiche were therefore ſhewed that men might beleeue in Chriſt, he ſetteth forthe this hiſtorie. Heſperius a man of good worſhippe and calling amongeſt vs, hath a piece of land in the territorie of *Fuſſalum* called *Cubedi*, in the which, perceiuing by the languiſhing of his cattell and ſeruauntes, that his houſe was infected with the force and rage of euill ſpirites, he deſired our fellow Prieſtes, (I being then abſent,) that ſome one of them would take the paines to go thither, that the ſpirit by his good praiers might giue place: one of them went thither, and there offred the ſacrifice of the bodie of Chriſt, praying very earneſtly, that the ſame diſquieting of ſpirites might ceaſe, and by and by God had compaſſion, and it ceaſed. Hee had giuen him of a friend of his, ſome parte of holy lande brought from Hieruſalem, where Chriſt being buried, roſe againe the third day: that earth he hung vp in his chamber, leaſt any euill might happē vnto him. But when his houſe was deliuered frō that trouble, he deuiſeth with himſelfe what he might do with the ſaide earth, which for reuerence ſake, he would not kēepe any longer in his chamber. &c. Hereby it is manifeſt, that ſuperſtition began immediatly, and (as it hapneth alwaies) grewe bigger with great increaſe, as if one ſhoulde roll forthe ſnowe clodded togither, or as when huge lumpes of ſnowe begin to fall down from the *Alpes*, all things on euery ſide are filled with ſnowe. Shortly after menne began to praye, and offer ſacrifice for dead mennes ſoules, yea and that with a good intention, as it may euidently appeare in many of the auncient fathers. Auguſtine.

After-

Afterwards when Bishops and parish Priests, did not onely not correct olde superstitions, but also vppon a good meaning increase them, at the last they grew to an infinite number. For when spirits appeared, men called not vpon God through Christ only, but also vpon Saints, forgetting that which S. Paule saith to the Romanes the tenth. (For I wil let passe at this time all other arguments,) how shall they call vpon him in whom they haue not beleeued? The Papists themselues cannot deny, but that we must beleeue onely in God, and therefore he onely is to be worshipped through his sonne.

The Aue Marie is no prayer.

Some write that it is a soueraign remedie to driue away diuels, if we pray *Aue Maria*. Where by the way is to bee noted, that the same salutation of the Angell is no prayer, but onely a greeting, and historicall narration, to witte, howe the Archangell Gabriell tolde the Virgin Mary before of the Incarnation of Christ. But I pray thee weigh the sense of the words, and whether thou wilt or no, thou must néedes say that these words conteine in them neither asking, nor thankesgiuing, which are the parts of prayer. When the Angell came vnto her, he saluted her, saying: χαῖρε *1. salue*, that is, God spede, or reioyce (for as Festus saith, the Greeke and the Latin word haue one signification.) Then he adderh further, full of grace, which is to be vnderstood passiuely, as they terme it in the schooles) for because God bestowed his grace vpon her: for so the Angell himselfe expounderh it, when he saith afterwardes, that she had founde grace, that is, that God is mercifull and louing towardes her. These words may not be so vnderstoode, as if she were the fountaine of grace (as some haue expounded it) and that she hath grace of her selfe, and bestoweth it vpon such as call vppon her, or speake vnto her with the salutation of the Angell. For neyther the Greeke worde, nor any other places of the Scriptures admit this sense. The Apostle saieth to the

Ephe-

Ephesians the first Chapter, that God hath made vs his faithfull seruants, deare by his grace through his beloued, that is, through Iesus Christ. In the which saying, the same word is put, which the Angell vsed in saluting the holy Virgine. It is written in the first Chapter of saint Iohns Gospell in plaine wordes, that Iohn Baptist bare witnesse of Christ with a loude voyce, and saide, that we all haue receiued of his fulnesse, grace for grace. For the lawe was giuen by Moses, but grace and truth came by by Christ. Many other suche places I omit for breuities sake. The Virgin Mary her selfe saith, the Lord hath done maruellous things vnto me. She setteth forth the grace of God, giuen vnto her from God, without any of her deserts. For he neuer bestowed greater grace on any woman. And there is a very great difference between him that conferreth grace, and them which receiue or obtaine grace. Grace is only to be sought at his hands, who giueth grace, and not of them which themselues receiue grace. A fewe yeares past, all men besought the Virgin for helpe, hoping for more grace and succour of her than of Christ himselfe. The Angell addeth further: Blessed art thou amongst women, that is, God hath conferred more grace vnto thee, than vnto any other woman. The words which are ioyned hereunto, Blessed is the frute of thy wombe, are not the words of the Angell, but of her cousin Elizabeth, who also saluted her. Vnto these words some religious men added, Iesus Christ, Amen. Therefore the Angell vttered not all those words of the Aue Marie (as it may manifestly be gathered out of the very text of Saint Luke, Chapter 1.) not because we deny these words to be good and holy, for the text saith of Elizabeth, that she was full of the holy ghost: but that which the Angell spake not, is not to be attributed vnto her. You shall not finde in any allowed Authors, that in the time of the Apostles and many dayes after, this greeting was accounted as a prayer, or that any godly men did

Ephe.1.

Iohn.2.

salute, and call vpon the holy Virgin. Which thing I write not, because I would bereaue the holy Virgin of hir honor, but least that against hir will, we giue hir that honour which is only due to God the Father, and to his sonne Iesu Christ. For he is our onely mediatour and redeemer. 1. Timoth. 2. Otherwise the Aue Marie, and other such places of holy Scripture full of consolation and comfort, touching the humanitie of Christ, his punishment, death, and merites, are to be often read, and diligently considered: neither are the Scriptures to be pulled out of the handes of the lay people, in whiche they may see all these things with their owne eyes. Indede I dente not but Spirites haue many times vanished away vpon the saying of Aue Marie, but it was so done, that men might therby be confirmed in their superstition.

1. *Tim.* 2.

Holy Water.

But these men proceeding further, did coniure or consecrate water with certain peculiar ceremonies, and kept it in vessels in their churches, houses and elsewhere: amongest many other vertues, ascribing this force vnto it, that it chaseth away spirites, and vaine sights. They also consecrated salte, and taught, that whether soeuer it were cast, it draue away spirites, and all deceites of the diuil, yea and the diuel himselfe also. Moreouer, they coniured with certain cerimonies and words, candles, palme, herbes, and other creatures, to driue away fantasies (as they terme them.) They laide these and such like things, as also the relikes of Saintes, in those places wheras Spirits had bin seene or heard. They also bare men in hande, that greate belles and sance belles by their noise fraied spirites out of the ayre. All these things are founde more at large in the Papists bookes whiche are written of the consecration of suche things, and are publikely extant. If belles be rong on S. Iohns day, or S. Agathes day, they say it is a most excellēt remedie against spirits. Some vsed to burne a bundell of consecrated herbes, that with the smoke therof they might

might chase away diuels. Many haue their peculiar and straunge blessings against spirites. There haue bene also many holy rites instituted by the commaundement of wandring soules, as Masses for the dead, vigils, prayers, and twelue monthes minds: as though the soules of godly men, being deliuered from all trouble, were not immediately translated into eternall rest. And it is also plaine by reading the Poets and Historiographers, that the Gentiles had their sacrifices for the dead, as their rites called Nouendialia, which were obserued the ninth day, and their yearely feastes. &c. Howbeit those counterfait ghostes craued nothing so earnestly, as that many Masses might be sung for their sakes, for they bare men in hand, that those had great and maruellous force to redéeme them out of Purgatorie.

The order of Cistertians.

Iohn Tritenhemius writeth in his Cronicles of the Monasterie of Hirsgauium, about the yeare of our Lorde 1098. Henricus the fourth then being Emperour, that at such time as the order of the Cistertians first began, there appeared many dayes and nights, not far from the citie of *Wormes*, great troupes of horsmen and footmen, as if they were now going forth to battail, running now here & now there in troupes, and that about .ir. of the clock at night they returned again to the hill nere at hand, out of ẏ which they vsed to come forth. At last a certaine Monke of the Abbey of *Limpurge*, which stood not far from ẏ hil vdence they issued, associating certain other vnto him, came on a certain night to ẏ place of the hil, & blessing himselfe with ẏ signe of ẏ holy Crosse, adiured them in the name of the holy and vnseparable Trinitie, as they came out of the hil, to declare vnto him who they were: vnto whom one of the company made answer: we are (quoth he) no vain things, neither yet liuing souldiers, but ẏ soules of earthly men, seruing in this world vnder our prince, who not lõg since was slain in this place. The armour, furniture, & horses, which were vnto vs instruments of sinne while we liued, are euen now after our

death, certaine signes and tokens of tormentes. Whatsoeuer ye see about vs, is all fire vnto vs, although you nothing discerne our fire. When the Monkes enquired whether they might be holpen by men, the spirit answered: we may (saith he) be holpen by fasting and praiers: but chiefly by the oblation of the bodie and blood of Christ, which thing we beseech you do for vs. Assone as he had so saide, all the whole rout of spirits cried three times with one voyce: pray for vs, pray for vs, pray for vs. And sodeinly withal, they séemed to be all resolued into fire, yea and the hill it self, as if it had bin on fire, cast forth as it were a great crashing and rushing of trées. They had in Churches a peculiar order of them whom they called Exorcists, or Conjurers, whose dutie was to coniure and driue away diuels, but they were not so endued with that gifte, as the auncient Christians were, and therfore they did but vaunt & boast of themselues.

Exorcists.

Afterwards certaine Monkes and Priests well séen in Magicall sciences (for they were neuer without such trim men) toke vpon them to coniure and driue away euill spirits out of houses into woods & desart places. They wrought maruellous and straunge things, and they said that a spirit in the name of Saints, and by the vertue of their coniuring and charecters, was constrained to giue place whether he would or not. Indéede the diuel gineth place, but he doth it as enemies do, which by flying chuse a more fit place to fight in, or more apte to embushe themselues. That which Sathan doth, he doth it willingly and of his owne accorde, that he might withdrawe men from trusting in God onely, and driue them headlong into Idolatrie. Christ and his Disciples cast out diuels, but they were loth and vnwilling to depart. Moreouer they vsed to hang Saint Iohns Gospell about their neckes, and carried about with them hallowed ware inclosed in a purse, which they call an *Agnus Dei*. There are certains bookes abroade, especially one written by Iacobus de Clusa, a Carthusian, con-

ceraing

cerning the appearing of soules separated from their bodies, wherein amongst other things we reade, after what sort men should prepare themselues, when any spirits appeare, howe they shall behaue themselues in comming to them, in departing from them, in the place where they appeare, and what questions are to be proposed vnto them: touching which things I spake before, in the second part of this Booke and second Chapter, where if you list you may finde them.

I haue heard men which haue confessed themselues to haue bene so superstitious, that when the priest lifted vp the host (as they call it) in saying masse, they would presently wipe their face with their hands, because they were perswaded, that it was good to stop all spirits from méeting with them in a visible forme.

But tell mée I pray thée whosoeuer thou art whiche doest so, by what places of Scripture canst thou confirme those ceremonies? Where doth Christ and his Disciples teach vs to expell the diuell (which is a spirit, and therefore without any bodie) by bodily things? shewe but one example, that they haue cast forth the diuel by this way or means. If you bring out of the bookes of Tobie, that the heart and liuer of the fish being laide on the coales, droue away the diuel with the smell, we say that the same booke is not accounted amongst the Canonicall scriptures: and moreouer that the same diuel was rather vanquished by the praiers of Tobias and his wife, than by any fumigation. Did Christ ordaine the holy Supper to this ende, that thereby diuels should be cast out? Albeit that an euil spirit do faine to giue place, because of these things, yet he bringeth to passe in the meane season, that superstition is more déeply rooted in the hearts of men.

CHAP. XI.

That spirites are not to bee driuen away by cursing and banning.

HEre I cannot ouerpasse, that certaine do vainly persuade themselues, that spirites may easily be driuen away with cursing and banning, for that (as they say) spirits approach neare vnto such as pray, and do more egerly disturbe and vex them. Our Lord Iesus Christ who can best tell how we should fight against the craft and subtiltie of the diuel, teacheth vs in many places to pray continually, he biddeth vs to pray in ỹ Lords praier, that we may be deliuered from euil, calling Sathan by the figure κατ' ἐξοχήν, Euil it selfe, because he excelleth therein. Nothing can bs more acceptable and pleasing to the diuel, than when any man vseth cursing and banning. He feineth that he is hereby driuen away, but in the meane season he crẽpeth inuisibly into their bosomes. If you list ye may driue away the diuel, in saying that he hath no place with you, but his place is in Hell, and that he hath nothing to do with those which put their only trust and confidence in Christ Iesus. For in the eight Chapter to the Romanes in the beginning, it is
Rom. 8. said: Now there is no condemnation vnto them, that are grafted in Christ Iesu, who walke not according to the flesh, but according to the spirit. A man may commaund the diuel to depart from him without any cursing or banning. And that is also to be blamed, that certaine wicked and rash men talke very beastly, and filthily with spirits, if they appeare at any time vnto them.

Some others, when spirits appeare vnto them, will by and by set on them, and driue thẽ away with naked swords: and sometimes throw them out of the windowes, not considering with themselues, that spirites are nothing hurt with weapons. In the Grecian histories we reade, that a

certaine

certaine *Lacedemonian* passing by a sepulchre in the night season, when a spirit seemed to appeare vnto him, ranne towards it thinking to run it through with his speare: saying: Whither flieſt thou, O thou soule which shalt twice die? Surely it is praiſe worthie when a man meeting with a spirit is not afraid, but yet boldneſſe and rashneſſe cannot be commended. If thy enemy, albeit he be very weake be not to be deſpiſed, much leſſe ought an enemy ſo mightie and ſo craftie, to be neglected. There haue bene ſome who when they would haue ſtriken a ſpirit with their ſworde, haue thought they haue ſtriken the featherbed, the diuel ſo mocked them. Others ſuppoſing they had throwne a ſpirit out of the window, by and by thought they heard ſhingles falling and ratling amongſt the trees.

It is reported that there haue bin ſome, who ſuppoſing with their weapons to hurt ſpirits, haue wounded themſelues, for their armes and other members of their bodie haue neuer ſerued them after. We muſt not vſe a materiall ſworde againſt ſpirits and vaine ſhewes (for it profiteth nothing) but we muſt vſe the ſworde of the ſpirit. They which will ſtrike ſpirits and ghoſts with a ſworde, indeed σκιαμαχεῖν, that is, fight with their owne ſhadow. In the booke of Iobe the diuel is ſignified by Leuiathan, which careth not for the ſpeare, for he appeareth in diuers ſhapes, and cannot be put to flight with pikes. The diuel is a ſpirit, he hath not bones and fleſh, but he only taketh on him a ſhape for a time. But in caſe ſpirits which haue bodies do wander (that is, coniurers, prieſts, whores, & whoremongers, which faine themſelues to be ſpirites) there can be no better coniuration inuented, than to bang them well with a cudgell. For thou ſhalt not ſo much preuaile with theſe kindes of diuels with words as with ſtripes.

Hitherto I haue ſhewed howe they ought to behaue themſelues which meete with ſpirits. As touching them which neuer heard or ſawe any thing (for there bee many

which

which neuer chaunced on such things) let them be thankful vnto God for so great a benefit, let them not be rashe and bolde, nor desirous to see such things, but rather let them pray vnto God for them which are vexed with such euils. Let them not do, as they many times vse which were neuer greatly sicke: for they serue not other mens griefes, and therefore they thinke they are litle sicke, or that they counterfeit their sickneſſe, vntill such time as they themselues fall into some great and daungerous disease: euen so God can cause them to see spirites, which neuer sawe any before, that afterwards they may be the more touched with other mens griefes, and diligently pray for them.

CHAP. XII.

After what sort we ought to behaue our selues, when we heare [illegible], or when other forewarnings happen.

BVt notice as concerning other matters, as in case any straunge crackes and noyses be heard, or any rare and marueilous things happen before the alteration of kingdomes (which we speake of before) what shall we then do? Surely we must not attribute too much vnto such things, for they sometimes, yea and most commonly chaunce by the secret of the diuell, who hath a great pleasure to haue men muse night and day on such matters, and to cause [illegible] before their eyes and mindes many horrible things, that thereby they may fall into some greeuous sickneſſe, and neuer be at rest. When such things happen indeed, they ought to put vs in minde, that we casting from vs all these things which displeaſe God, should wholly consecrate our selues vnto God, and so frame our selues, that at what houre soeuer he come, and please to call vs out of this life, we should be readie for him euen as he himselfe teacheth